

Struggling to Survive with Regression Power in the Primordial Saint Sect

Chapter 201: Transcending Death Dao Offspring! The Secret of the Great Ascension!

[1,693 words]

Sacred Fire Cliff, Manifestation Pavilion.

This place was a loft built leaning against the cliff face, neither reaching the sky above nor touching the ground below, where the pure clear Qi and the heavy turbid Yuan of Earth intertwined into a splendid radiance.

Its name was 【Pure and Turbid Unified Yuan Qi】 .

Within the range covered by this Qi, the clash of upper clarity and lower turbidity constantly collided.

If a Qi Refining cultivator mistakenly entered this place, they would immediately be ground into dust by the merging of Heaven and Earth.

Even a Foundation Establishment True Person, if touched by this Yuan Qi, would have their Dharma body shattered.

This showed how strict the defenses of this place were, for the Dao methods and techniques qualified to be placed here were all highly useful to Foundation Establishment True Persons.

Cultivation methods and great divine powers could not even compare to them.

As for great divine powers, they were only limited to Qi Refining cultivators.

And the nature of these cultivation methods was very special, because strictly speaking, the Primordial Saint Sect, the Sword Pavilion, the Pure Land, and even the Dao Court, did not worry about their methods being leaked.

Because the fruit position corresponding to the cultivation methods was always in their own hands.

For example, the Nine Transforming Dragon Art, although Lü Yang had learned it, the Pure Land still remained calm, because the corresponding 【City Head Soil】 was always trapped in the Pure Land.

Therefore, the confidentiality of cultivation methods was not that high.

On the contrary, Dao methods and techniques useful to Foundation Establishment True Persons, which could produce effects in True Person battles, were all extremely precious.

“Though up until now, I actually haven’t properly fought anyone in a spell duel.”

Lü Yang showed an awkward expression.

Let alone spell duels, he usually only crushed his opponents.

The only recent duel with someone of the same realm had been against Wu Cang.

Wu Cang, being a rogue cultivator in his past life, had only joined the Primordial Saint Sect after reincarnation.

His strength in the sect, though not exactly peerless, was at least considered weak enough that anyone could bully him.

This was evident from how so many people had gathered outside Mending Heaven Peak back then, waiting to ambush him when he came out.

However, this time was different.

【Kingdom of Qing】, known as a northern wonder, was located between the Dao Court and the Primordial Saint Sect, and was also close to the Sword Pavilion.

Once war broke out, both sides would inevitably send reinforcements.

Moreover, the matter of Chong Guang seeking gold might not be completely hidden from others' calculations.

Even with Clear Snow True Lord present, while Golden Core cultivators wouldn’t interfere, it was still possible for some Foundation Establishment True Persons to be dispatched to stop Chong Guang’s quest for gold.

After all, the prerequisite for Chong Guang seeking gold was to reverse the fruit position rules within the 【Kingdom of Qing】.

So they didn’t need to do much.

They only needed to find a way to guard this northern wonder or identify the reincarnation of True Person Chong Guang.

The latter depended on Chong Guang himself.

But the former would rely on them.

If one side failed, the entire plan would be lost.

In other words——

“This time, it seems I really have to fight desperately with strong opponents of the same realm.”

Lü Yang sighed deeply, unwilling but helpless.

“Looking on the bright side, at least this time I get to witness the full process of Chong Guang seeking gold with my own eyes.”

“This could help me accumulate some experience for my future.”

“In case there are any big traps on the path to seeking gold, Chong Guang can help me step on them first.”

“That way I won’t lack experience and fall into the same traps in the future.”

While thinking, Lü Yang had already stepped into the Manifestation Pavilion.

In the next moment, his vision suddenly turned black.

The formation spirit of Sacred Fire Cliff, which he had seen many times before, emerged and gracefully walked up to him.

“True Person Yuan Tu, it is my pleasure to serve you.”

Lü Yang clicked his tongue in amazement.

Although he had studied it privately many times, he still found this formation spirit astonishing every time he saw it.

Next, the formation spirit lightly opened her vermilion lips and respectfully spoke:

“Please state your request. I will select a suitable Dao method for you based on your personal conditions.”

“Hmm.”

Lü Yang pondered for a moment after hearing this and then said:

“I need a Dao method capable of soul-searching cultivators of the same realm or even higher realms, and the memory must not be incomplete.”

This was naturally for the sake of the Great Ascension Grade One True Qi.

However, since the innate Dao offspring could not be soul-searched at all, Lü Yang had never been able to extract from its sea of consciousness the memory left by the innate True Person about the Great Ascension Grade One True Qi.

He could not even perform harvesting dual cultivation.

Because the innate Dao offspring was essentially a monster without gender, it naturally lacked any organ that could be used for “harvesting”.

The innate conditions were simply not met.

Thus, he could only turn to the Manifestation Pavilion for help.

“Searching for a suitable Dao method for you.”

Soon, after Lü Yang stated his request, the formation spirit’s beautiful eyes flashed brightly as if searching for something.

After a long while, she finally raised her hand.

“A usable Dao method has been found for you.”

As her words fell, a white light emerged from the formation spirit’s hand.

“There really is one?”

Lü Yang’s face immediately showed joy.

He hurriedly moved closer and swept his divine sense over it, then froze:

“【Taiyin Celestial Human Transformation Mystic Art】?”

Lü Yang activated his divine sense and soon grasped the entire Dao method.

Afterward, his expression turned strange:

“Taiyin manifestation, celestial human transformation.”

“This method can be used internally and externally, capable of altering flesh and blood, reversing yin and yang.”

“Those affected by this technique will become the body of the Celestial Mother, possessing the virtue of nurturing all things.”

Looking at this Dao method, Lü Yang's entire face wrinkled and twisted.

What kind of thing was this?

“By cultivating this method, one can refine a divine light called Celestial Mother Transformation.”

“As long as this light covers someone, regardless of their original gender or attributes, they will all transform into the Taiyin Mother Body.”

In simple terms, it was gender transformation.

At the same time, the formation spirit explained:

“The soul of a Foundation Establishment True Person is solid, and their sea of consciousness is immune to all evils, so soul-searching is impossible.”

“But I detected that your attainments in dual cultivation are extremely high.”

“The strength of your Mending Heaven Scripture is such that even during dual cultivation, when your partner reaches their peak, you can relax their sea of consciousness and extract their knowledge, even from a Foundation Establishment True Person.”

“So I specifically recommend this Dao method and technique for you.”

“You just need to use this divine power to turn the other party into a woman, and then...”

“Stop, stop, stop!”

Lü Yang quickly interrupted the formation spirit's lewd words.

His face darkened, and he gritted his teeth:

“What kind of method is this?”

“Isn't there something more reliable?”

The formation spirit immediately shook her head:

“There isn't.”

“Are you really not choosing this Dao method?”

The formation spirit tilted her head in confusion:

“Based on the simulation, this is the only method that allows you, with your current cultivation, to soul-search a True Person of the same realm.”

“This...ugh!”

Lü Yang’s hands trembled, and he let out a helpless sigh:

“Fine, I still trust the formation’s simulation results.”

“Looks like there’s no other way.”

“You’ve really made me suffer!”

Half an hour later, at Luo Feng Mountain.

Lü Yang wore an expression of helplessness.

He silently recited the incantation and then formed a Celestial Mother Transformation Mystic Light.

It fell on the collapsed innate Dao offspring on the ground.

In the next second, the originally handsome young form of the innate Dao offspring immediately transformed.

Its flesh and bones shifted.

In the blink of an eye, it actually grew organs suitable for harvesting.

Unfortunately, Lü Yang’s skill was insufficient, causing him to fail at making it beautiful.

Instead, its appearance turned into an awkward mix, somewhat grotesque.

“For the sake of cultivation, I’ve truly sacrificed too much!”

Lü Yang sighed, then summoned Chen Xin’an, who had also cultivated the Mending Heaven Scripture to a high level and even used it to reach Foundation Establishment.

“I’ll leave it to you. Go!”

Chen Xin’an: “.....???”

The next morning.

Lü Yang walked out of the closed-door cultivation chamber.

The innate Dao offspring had already been completely harvested and dissipated.

At the same time, he had thoroughly understood its current state.

“Actually, even without harvesting it, it didn’t have much longer to live.”

“The reason it could remain in the world with strength surpassing Foundation Establishment was essentially due to the golden attribute left behind when the innate True Person failed to seek gold in the past.”

“However, that golden attribute had already been taken away by Clear Snow True Lord back then.”

Aside from that, there was also the information about the Great Ascension Grade One True Qi.

The good news was that the innate True Person had indeed left behind a method to cultivate the Great Ascension Grade One True Qi.

The bad news was that Lü Yang no longer had the conditions to cultivate it.

“To think that cultivating the Great Ascension Grade One True Qi... actually requires golden attribute!?”

Lü Yang’s face turned dark.

The so-called Great Ascension Grade One True Qi was not a complete inheritance but rather one of the innate True Person’s mad simulations!

Using golden attribute to cultivate true Qi!

Using golden attribute to build the Dao foundation!

Using golden attribute to refine divine powers!

And the craziest part was that, according to the innate True Person’s simulation, the Dao foundation achieved through the Great Ascension Grade One True Qi would not point to any fruit position.

To prove the Dao with this method, one had to achieve “empty proof”!

Just like the Body Transformation Ascension Path, the Heaven’s Patrol Path, the Path of Silent Bliss...

In the eyes of the innate True Person, these were all cultivation paths that each sect’s Nascent Soul Dao Masters had proven out of nothing!

Thus, only “empty proof” was the true path to Nascent Soul!

In his descriptions, the innate True Person felt immensely proud of his conclusion.

He was convinced that his speculation had undoubtedly glimpsed a hidden corner of the Nascent Soul Dao Masters' secrets!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 202: Chong Guang Seeks Gold, The Great Battle is Imminent!

[1,460 words]

"A peerless genius, but what use is that to me?"

After reviewing the memories concerning the Grand Completion Grade One True Qi, Lü Yang gave his own evaluation, feeling quite dejected for a moment, thinking it had all been nothing but empty joy.

There was no doubt that the Innate True Person was indeed an extremely rare genius in the world.

He had even conducted verification during his lifetime, confirming that the method he developed must be the pinnacle of True Qi, impossible for anyone to surpass.

"Isn't this nonsense? You used Metal Essence to refine Qi."

What was Metal Essence?

It was a rare treasure that only a great True Person who had achieved Perfect Foundation Establishment could refine a trace of from their soul, which would then condense over time.

Even True Lords found it highly useful!

And you used that to refine Qi?

"No wonder True Lord Feixue had no interest in this so-called Innate Dao Abomination, nor cared about the Grade One True Qi. He must have already soul-searched and learned all the details."

At this thought, Lü Yang sighed again.

Because honestly, if the only difficulty lay in the Metal Essence, he actually had a way, or rather, the Innate True Person had already left a way.

"According to the arrangement of the Innate True Person, all I need to do is bring the Myriad Spirits Banner, which carries his karmic remnant, to the Biyang Cultivation World, and then use the banner to summon the Dao Abomination. The Dao Abomination would have no choice but to become the spirit of my banner, and by then, I could use its Metal Essence to cultivate the Grand Completion Grade One True Qi."

The key to this was the Myriad Spirits Banner.

But not the one in Lü Yang's hand that had already been cleansed by the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes, but the one still held by Liu Xin, which retained the Innate True Person's karma.

However, these were not real problems.

With the **【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】** in hand, Lü Yang could easily regress again to retrieve the original Myriad Spirits Banner, or even repeatedly regress to extract the Metal Essence from the Dao Abomination!

Using Metal Essence to refine Qi, establish foundation, and even refine divine abilities... he could do all of it!

It was merely a matter of regressing a few more times.

"The problem lies with... the Empty Attainment!"

Lü Yang's gaze turned solemn.

In the Innate True Person's account, this "Empty Attainment" was completely vague, as if shrouded in mist, and it was obvious the Innate True Person himself hadn't figured it out.

How to attain the Empty Attainment?

What was the method?

There was nothing!

This single issue alone basically severed the path of the so-called Grand Completion Grade One True Qi.

Without achieving a Fruit Position, without attaining Gold Core, what use was a strong foundation?

"How vexing."

Lü Yang pondered for a long time and finally made a decision: "At this point, it seems I have no choice but to rely on my peerless wisdom to perfect the Innate True Person's cultivation method!"

With that, he took out the Myriad Spirits Banner.

"Master Ting You!"

At Lü Yang's call, Master Ting You leisurely emerged.

Since the fall of the 【True Lord of Bearing Heaven's True Virtue】 from the Sword Pavilion, he had been in a particularly good mood.

"What is it?"

Without wasting words, Lü Yang immediately sent over the contents of the Grand Completion Grade One True Qi: "Disciple has newly acquired a cultivation method that is said to be beyond anyone's comprehension."

"To me, it seems like reading the Heavens' Book, so I wish to request Master's guidance."

"Heh, a clumsy provocation."

Master Ting You smiled slightly upon hearing this: "How could there be a cultivation method that no one can comprehend in this world? It's just your lack of insight!"

Taking the divine sense Lü Yang handed over, Master Ting You focused his attention.

"Hmm?"

At first, Master Ting You's expression remained relaxed, but as he delved deeper, his brows gradually furrowed, and finally, he slowly closed his eyes.

"How is it, Master?" Lü Yang asked curiously.

"First of all, it's not that I can't understand it."

Master Ting You replied calmly: "It's mainly because the author of this method was far too audacious, and their thinking is so peculiar that it goes beyond the scope of normal people."

"I need to study it further."

After speaking, Master Ting You turned and instantly vanished into the Myriad Spirits Banner, clearly entering seclusion.

Seeing this, Lü Yang also revealed a look of delight.

Excellent! My peerless wisdom is beginning to bear fruit!

Lü Yang had great confidence in his exceptional talent.

Perhaps he might really find a way to solve the problem of the "Empty Attainment".

With this thought, Lü Yang felt reassured.

Next, he took out another jade slip.

Since it was rare for him to visit the Xianfa Pavilion, such an important place of the Primordial Saint Sect, of course, he wouldn't just come out with a single cultivation method.

That said, because his 【Ten Thousand Chariots Dragon Riding Dao Foundation】 was extremely rare, and the corresponding 【Cheng Tou Earth】 was not under the sect's control, the Xianfa Pavilion didn't have any methods that perfectly matched him.

After much selection, he finally chose a barely suitable method.

" 【Mountain Command Moving Mountain True Method】 ."

This was a Wu Earth method, reputed to be capable of moving mountains and shifting peaks, somewhat related to 【Guardian of the Mountain】 , and was quite handy to use.

More importantly, this divine ability suited Lü Yang's preferences very well.

As the name implied, this divine ability could move mountains and rivers, shifting distant peaks across a thousand miles, using the landscape to suppress his enemies.

It didn't sound like much.

After all, a single mountain was nothing to a Foundation Establishment True Person, who could easily dismiss it with a wave of the sleeve or at least escape from it.

However, the 【Mountain Command Moving Mountain True Method】 was different.

This method shared similarities with 【Guardian of the Mountain】 , emphasizing both the "Mountain on the Body" and the "Mountain in the Heart", usually advancing in unison during casting.

The casting involved three steps: 【Chanting the Incantation】 , 【Forming the Seal】 , and 【Pointing the Profound】 .

Though seemingly cumbersome, there was hidden profundity.

If an enemy heard his chanting, they would immediately bear the weight of mountains and rivers, their dharma body becoming immobile.

If they saw his sealing gestures, they would immediately feel the burden of great mountains, their thoughts unable to turn.

And if they were finally struck by his finger point—

Goodness, their dharma body would collapse, turning into soil, and they themselves would become a great mountain, crashing to the ground, instantly forming a mysterious connection with the earth's meridians below.

In this way, would they still hope to escape?

Not impossible.

Breaking the connection with the earth's meridians would allow escape, but the price would be causing damage to the meridians and possibly suffering some heavenly punishment.

Thus, the evaluation of this method in the Xianfa Pavilion was "sinister and disgusting".

To have earned such a reputation among the sect's True Persons showed how devious it was.

"Such a method should naturally be mine to wield!"

With the great battle approaching, Lü Yang dared not slack off in the slightest.

After leaving the Xianfa Pavilion, he immediately went to Mending Heaven Peak and devoted himself entirely to cultivation.

Three days later.

Lü Yang was sitting cross-legged on a gauze bed in Lady Ruo Xiang's boudoir, discussing the 【Mountain Command Moving Mountain True Method】 with her, when he suddenly looked toward the sky.

A streak of spiritual light flew over—it was a flying message.

The message contained only a few words:

【Tonight at midnight, I shall pass away and be reborn. I hope that on the day you succeed and attain Gold Position, you will retrieve the "Cheng Tou Earth" and pave the way forward.】

In an instant, Lü Yang's expression turned solemn.

The big event was about to begin!

Lü Yang looked up at the sky, activating the Destiny-Inspecting Instrument between his brows.

However, the normally clear and distinct web of karma under the light of Bing Fire was now completely obscured.

A True Lord was concealing the karma!

Almost simultaneously, inside and outside the Primordial Saint Sect, in the Jiangdong Dao Court, Jiangxi Pure Land, and Jiangnan Sword Pavilion, all reacted, with mysterious divine senses resonating with heaven and earth.

"Chong Guang is seeking Gold?"

"Hong Yun is dead, so it's about time he sought it."

"Can he succeed?"

"He must not be allowed to succeed!"

"Ignore him."

Under the watchful gazes of many divine senses, midnight soon arrived.

In the great hall of Sacred Fire Cliff, True Person Chong Guang sat quietly, silently calculating something with his hands.

A moment later, he suddenly opened his eyes.

"Heh."

With a light chuckle, True Person Chong Guang's figure shattered like a bubble, silently dissipating on the spot.

His disappearance rippled through the void like a stone dropped into a calm lake, immediately sending waves across the stillness and alerting all those who had been watching.

True Person Chong Guang had already reincarnated.

His goal was to seek Gold!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 203: Cultivator's Purgatory, Mortal's Paradise

[1,453 words]

Almost on the very next day after Chong Guang's reincarnation, Qingcheng Feixue True Person personally came out of seclusion to oversee the situation and summoned Yinshan True Person and Lü Yang to Sacred Fire Cliff.

"This time going south, Yuan Tu will take the lead."

Qingcheng Feixue True Person sat at the main seat, speaking calmly, "I will personally oversee this and ensure that no Golden Core True Person will interfere in this southern expedition."

"Besides that, most of the Great True Persons at the peak of Foundation Establishment will not participate either."

"Everyone has their selfish motives. With Chong Guang leading the way, they would rather see him take the risks and would not seriously try to stop him."

"As for the late-stage Foundation Establishment Great True Persons, most of them seek perfection and will not get involved either."

"Moreover, Chong Guang already made arrangements."

"Even if a Great True Person really joins the battle, you don't need to worry. Someone will handle them. Your opponents will only be those at the middle or early stages of Foundation Establishment."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang let out a breath of relief, "Disciple accepts the order."

Chong Guang True Person's arrangements were indeed reassuring.

Without forcing him to challenge beyond his level and only facing middle and early-stage opponents, he did have some confidence!

"Very good."

Qingcheng Feixue True Person nodded, and between her embroidered brows, a hint of killing intent suddenly emerged, "This time, I want you to invade 【Kingdom of Qing】 , destroy their sects, and strip away their spiritual veins!"

" 【Kingdom of Qing】 is the nail driven into Jiangbei by Dao Court."

"It governs five major Foundation Establishment forces: the Zhao Xia Clan, Yuan Chen Clan, Five Elements Sect, Panyun Sect, and Upper Xuan Sword Sect."

"Among them, Upper Xuan Sword Sect holds dominance, and their Sect Master has received support from the Sword Pavilion, now reaching the peak of the middle stage of Foundation Establishment."

Qingcheng Feixue True Person gave a brief explanation.

To a True Person, the background of a mere Foundation Establishment power was as clear as looking at the lines on her palm, and since she spoke of it, there would not be the slightest mistake.

Finally, Qingcheng Feixue True Person spoke decisively:

"This concerns Chong Guang's pursuit of the Golden Core, so once you go south, do not hold back. Kill, plunder, and destroy."

"I've long disliked that so-called wonder of 【Kingdom of Qing】 !"

Lü Yang did not say another word and immediately bowed low.

"I will strictly follow True Person's decree!"

Moments later, Lü Yang and Yinshan True Person rode their escape light and left the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds.

Of course, Chong Guang True Person could not have dispatched only the two of them to go south.

In fact, they were more like the ones in charge.

And with Qingcheng Feixue True Person personally issuing the order this time, the scale far exceeded the past extermination of Divine Martial Sect.

With a single order from the True Person, all of Jiangbei responded.

It was obvious that Chong Guang True Person had been preparing for this long ago.

Now, 【Kingdom of Qing】 had already been surrounded airtight by various large and small sects from Jiangbei.

The two sides had been in a standoff for several months, like a powder keg waiting for someone to ignite the situation.

On the way, Lü Yang did not forget to consult with Yinshan True Person.

"Although True Person ordered me to take charge this time, I am still young and lack sufficient experience, far inferior to Senior Brother Yinshan in steadiness and wisdom."

"Therefore, I ask Senior Brother to give me more guidance and help me fill in the gaps."

". Yuan Tu, you speak too seriously."

Yinshan True Person waved his hand, but judging by his expression, he was clearly quite pleased.

Obviously, Lü Yang's respectful attitude made him feel honored.

Moreover, the two of them were already like branches from the same root, so Yinshan True Person did not hold back.

Returning the favor, he said:

"Junior Brother, do not underestimate this 【Kingdom of Qing】 ."

"Senior Brother Chong Guang and I once divined the heavenly secrets and studied it carefully."

"This so-called wonder is truly operated by Dao Court like an iron bucket."

"Or rather, this is how Dao Court's system works."

"They might fall short in external expansion, but when it comes to defending their own territory, 【Kingdom of Qing】 is like an eternal kingdom whose rules are hard to overturn."

"Dao Court's system acts as Heaven's hunting law?"

Lü Yang frowned slightly.

Until now, he had not truly visited territories under other powers' rule.

In fact, he had not even properly explored Jiangbei.

This was indeed an opportunity.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang looked at Yinshan True Person again with curiosity and asked:

"Senior Brother, please explain further. What exactly makes this 【Kingdom of Qing】 or Dao Court different?"

Yinshan True Person fell silent for a moment before continuing:

"In a word, it is a cultivator's purgatory, a mortal's paradise."

"Words on paper always feel shallow. If I just tell you here, you won't fully grasp it."

"You'll understand once you see it with your own eyes after we arrive."

Jiangbei, 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

This wonder spanned five provinces, governing over a million people.

Beyond this place was the 【Great Long River】 that divided the four great regions of East, South, West, and North.

Lü Yang and Yinshan True Person quietly arrived here riding their escape light.

However, they did not immediately meet with the various forces of Jiangbei gathered here.

Instead, they first went to a sparsely populated city, which was currently under the control of a Demon Sect from Jiangbei, the Xiangqu Sect.

"This place was originally under 【Kingdom of Qing】's rule."

Yinshan True Person explained, "Although they have been driven out now, the influence of 【Kingdom of Qing】 still lingers, and it has not fully recovered to this day."

"Ha ha..."

Lü Yang showed a look of surprise.

Then, he suddenly reached out his hand, retrieving a book from a household in the city.

The book had only two large characters on its cover: 『Dao Canon』 !

"Dao Court governs the world by using the 『Dao Canon』 to select scholars."

"Mortals must pass the imperial examinations to become cultivators."

"If they do not have scholarly titles, they are nothing more than wild fox Zen."

"Therefore, the first step in cultivation is to study the 『Dao Canon』 and take the 【Child Scholar Exam】 ."

"Next comes 【Scholar】 , 【Recommended Man】 , and 【Presented Scholar】 ."

"However, these are all just preparatory titles for cultivators, in name only, without real cultivation."

"Only by obtaining the title of 【Presented Scholar】 , and then networking with masters and friends, finally receiving a Dao Court appointment and being granted an official position, can one be considered truly stepping into the path of cultivation."

"Yet even so, under Dao Court's rule, these titled mortals are not to be trifled with."

"This is because Dao Court forbids all unauthorized cultivation!"

"Below Foundation Establishment, if a cultivator does not have a title or official status from Dao Court, even if they have reached the peak of Qi Refining, they cannot display any supernatural abilities."

"Because in Dao Court, even the spiritual energy of Heaven and Earth has an owner."

"Every bit of spiritual energy belongs to Dao Court."

"Any cultivator without a title who absorbs Heaven and Earth's spiritual energy is committing theft of public property and will be executed along with their entire clan."

"In such circumstances, even a titled mortal's angry shout can cause an illegal cultivator to collapse helplessly on the ground."

The 『Dao Canon』 even specifically described such a case.

It told of a ninth-rank county magistrate in 【Kingdom of Qing】 who was once hated by an illegal cultivator.

That cultivator had refined a flying sword with the intent to assassinate the magistrate.

However, the magistrate subdued him with a single shout, causing his magic to dissipate.

In the end, the cultivator was beaten to death by government soldiers.

"... What a Dao Court!"

Seeing this, Lü Yang finally understood Yinshan True Person's earlier description.

Such governance truly deserved to be called a cultivator's purgatory!

As for a mortal's paradise...

"I don't think so."

Lü Yang's gaze deepened.

Admittedly, under Dao Court, the common people lived in peace with favorable weather.

However, their social classes had completely solidified, with almost no room for advancement.

At its core, it was still the same as herding livestock.

"It's just that Dao Court's methods look more refined on the surface..."

Does feeding livestock until they are fat and round make them any less livestock?

In the end, they were still to be slaughtered!

In fact, when it came to the slaughter, the people under Dao Court's rule couldn't even resist!

One must know that even in Jiangbei, under the Primordial Saint Sect, there had been major sects that produced True Persons.

If the people of Jiangbei were herded like livestock, they would resist.

However, in Jiangdong, such things would never happen.

With just a single decree from the Dao Court Emperor, no matter how many people died, there would be no resistance.

Under Dao Court's rule, the high-born held absolute power over the life and death of the low-born!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 204: Beneath the Rule of the Primordial Saint Sect, Walking on Thin Ice

[1,586 words]

In Jiangbei, at Mount Gaizhu.

The wood-element spiritual vein here thrived with vitality, teeming with life as everything competed to flourish.

Lü Yang and True Person Yinshan rode their light-escape technique and soon landed outside the mountain.

"Previously, the Primordial Saint Sect issued an order for all cultivators in Jiangbei to gather here."

True Person Yinshan did not disturb the mountain's formation.

Instead, he took out a flying message, ignited it with his magical power, and lightly tossed it, letting it transform into spiritual light that flew into the mountain.

After a brief moment, a graceful figure walked out from the mountain.

The person had charming, water-like eyes, delicately painted brows, and a skirt that barely extended past her hips, revealing just enough to stir curiosity.

She carried a faint, intoxicating fragrance on her body.

"The lower sect disciple Han Xiang greets the High True Persons of the Saint Sect."

As soon as the woman appeared, she bowed gracefully.

Her posture was dignified, yet there was an undeniable allure, creating an intense contrast.

However, Lü Yang dared not be careless.

This woman named **【Han Xiang】** was no simple figure.

She was the current leader of 【Xiangqu Sect】 in Jiangbei.

She was at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment.

It was said that her sect also had a late-stage Foundation Establishment True Person sitting in command, making them a notable demonic faction in Jiangbei.

"The two High True Persons have come from afar, why not come inside and have a chat?"

Han Xiang giggled foolishly, then took the initiative to step aside.

On the surface, it sounded like a simple invitation, but the tone seemed to carry another implication.

However, who was Lü Yang?

He had always prided himself on having a heart of iron, immune to female charms.

How could he be affected by such fox-like seduction?

He immediately put on a serious expression.

"Are you alone?"

Lü Yang scanned with his divine sense.

To his surprise, the vast Mount Gaizhu seemed to have only Han Xiang present.

Where were the other Foundation Establishment True Persons summoned by the Saint Sect?

"Reporting to Lord, they have gone elsewhere."

Han Xiang revealed a somewhat awkward expression.

"They heard that High True Persons from the Saint Sect were arriving and that a great battle was imminent, so they went to conduct some private trades."

Lü Yang was stunned for a moment before realizing the situation.

Anyone who managed to make a name for themselves under the rule of the Saint Sect, becoming a Foundation Establishment True Person, surely had a few hidden trump cards.

Naturally, they would have some unused items as well.

With the great battle approaching, they needed to find ways to exchange those useless items for combat power.

However, Lü Yang was still puzzled.

"Shouldn't such matters be conducted here at Mount Gaizhu?"

"Moreover, if our Saint Sect hosted it, wouldn't the trading efficiency be much higher?"

"Uh..."

Upon hearing this, Han Xiang slightly parted her red lips but remained speechless.

True Person Yinshan beside them also seemed to realize something, showing a strange expression.

In the next moment, Lü Yang heard True Person Yinshan's voice transmission:

"Junior Brother, you may not know this."

"Due to the nature of our Saint Sect, we are not very trusted by others."

"And such trades inevitably require revealing some real treasures."

Lü Yang immediately understood.

Why wouldn't they let the Saint Sect host the trades and instead conduct them privately?

It was because they feared that the True Persons of the Saint Sect might covet their goods and forcefully seize them!

Thinking even further, there might have been incidents where Saint Sect True Persons disguised their identities, ambushed the traders, and later blamed it on external enemies.

"Have we done such things before?"

"Absolutely not!"

True Person Yinshan declared with absolute confidence.

Lü Yang immediately caught the underlying meaning.

They definitely had!

And likely more than once!

At this realization, Lü Yang couldn't help but feel helpless.

He had underestimated the shamelessness of the Saint Sect's True Persons.

How could these beasts act like this?

"Where are they trading?"

"Take me there."

Upon hearing this, Han Xiang immediately showed a troubled expression.

Seeing this, Lü Yang's expression turned serious.

"Do not misunderstand."

"I, Lü Yang, am different from the other True Persons of the Saint Sect."

"I would never do such things as ambushing traders."

You've already thought of it, and you're telling me you won't do it?

However, with the words already spoken this far, how could she dare refuse?

'Living under the Saint Sect's rule is like walking on thin ice...'

Han Xiang secretly cursed in her heart but dared not show any sign of it on her face.

She could only sigh and say:

"Allow me to lead the High True Person there now, I hope the High True Person will not take offense."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang slightly curled his lips into a gentle smile.

"Previously, I obtained a few magical tools overseas that are useless in my hands."

"It would be better to trade them away."

"Not only can this enhance the combat strength of Jiangbei's cultivators, but it can also help me exchange for some more useful treasures."

"Oh?"

Upon hearing this, Han Xiang's beautiful eyes lit up.

After all, magical tools from the Saint Sect, even if useless to Lü Yang, would still be treasures to them.

"However, Mount Gaizhu still needs a True Person to guard it."

"I'll stay here."

True Person Yinshan volunteered.

"Yuan Tu, you go with her, leave this place to me."

"...Then I'll trouble Senior Brother."

Lü Yang exchanged a glance with True Person Yinshan, as if they had reached some agreement, and then nodded.

A short while later, in a forest outside 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

Lü Yang and Han Xiang both used their light-escape techniques, concealing their figures, and landed in the forest.

They finally stopped in front of a cave, releasing their auras.

Entering the cave.

They saw several figures already gathered inside.

A rough count showed more than ten people, all looking toward them.

However, everyone had concealed their auras and appearances.

Clearly, they did not intend to reveal their identities at this trading meeting.

After all, the major forces in Jiangbei could not possibly be united.

Among the summoned Foundation Establishment True Persons, there were even those with deep-seated grudges.

Naturally, they dared not act too openly.

Moreover, anonymity made it easier to offload stolen goods.

In this regard, Jiangbei's cultivators had clearly been influenced by the Saint Sect.

They were all cunning and crafty.

However, this actually made it easier for Lü Yang to blend in.

"The time has come."

With a low shout, a yellow earth-colored light shone in the center of the cave.

An old man with white hair and white robes emerged from the light.

Almost at the same time, Han Xiang transmitted her voice to Lü Yang, introducing:

"This person is called 【Fishing Dragon Elder】 ."

"He is a rogue cultivator from Jiangbei."

"He likely obtained the inheritance of a great sect or had some other fortuitous encounter."

"Thus, he is also at the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment."

"He was the first to propose this trading event."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes.

Among the Foundation Establishment True Persons present, only this Fishing Dragon Elder did not conceal his appearance or aura.

This showed that he had full confidence in his strength.

He was completely fearless.

Next, they saw Fishing Dragon Elder smile slightly in the center of the venue.

"Since this trading event was proposed by this old man, I shall begin first."

After speaking, he waved his hand.

In the next second, the temperature in the cave suddenly rose.

Rolling blood energy spread like a blazing sun.

A mighty and ferocious Flood Dragon corpse appeared!

"Some time ago, a True Lord of the Saint Sect was fighting overseas, causing chaos there."

"This old man had some luck and managed to fish up a Flood Dragon at the early stage of Foundation Establishment."

"Its tendons and bones can be used to refine treasures."

"Its blood can be used to enhance yang energy."

"There's even half a dragon horn..."

"This old man only seeks one bottle of lifespan-extending spiritual pill."

Upon hearing this, everyone fell silent.

If it were just ordinary lifespan-extending pills, many here had them.

But what Foundation Establishment True Persons referred to as lifespan extension actually meant methods to counteract the "Bifeng."

For example, the Wind-Avoiding Pill once gifted by the Head of Mending Heaven Peak to Arhat Fulong was such a treasure.

Unfortunately, that seemed to be the personal fortune of the Peak Head, unrelated to the peak itself.

Thus, after Lü Yang took over Mending Heaven Peak, he did not obtain the pill or its formula.

After a moment, a light suddenly flashed at the original spot.

When the light faded, the Flood Dragon corpse Fishing Dragon Elder had displayed vanished.

It was clear someone had completed the trade with him in secret.

Using light to conceal the trade obviously indicated they did not want others to know who had obtained the treasure.

"Next."

Soon, more Foundation Establishment True Persons stood up to trade.

The items they presented were diverse, including spiritual treasures, pills, and cultivation methods.

Even Han Xiang participated once.

However, what left Lü Yang speechless was that Han Xiang disguised herself as a burly man during her trade, with an incredibly rough voice.

Was such caution really necessary?

At this moment, another light shone in the cave.

A youthful-looking, yet old-mannered Dao Child stepped out.

Another one who did not conceal their appearance.

"He's the Sect Master of Treasure-Distributing Cliff, the mid-stage Foundation Establishment True Person known as Multi-Treasure Dao Child!"

"He actually came as well?"

"He's a fat sheep... even Saint Sect True Persons have robbed him before!"

For a moment, many Foundation Establishment True Persons stared at him intently.

However, when the Dao Child looked back, most of them didn't dare meet his gaze.

After all, most present were at the early stage of Foundation Establishment.

A mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator was already quite intimidating to them.

Only Lü Yang narrowed his eyes at the sight.

'Interesting.'

He glanced at the Dao Child, who radiated treasure light from head to toe, as if the words "Big Target" were written on his forehead.

Suddenly, Lü Yang revealed a bright smile.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,597 words]

"I have a Dao technique in my hand, as everyone already knows."

Duobao Tongzi stood on the stage, holding his head high as he declared, "Its name is 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 , which allows multiple magical treasures to be combined into a stronger magical treasure."

"Three mid-grade spiritual treasures can be combined into one high-grade spiritual treasure, nine low-grade spiritual treasures can be combined into one mid-grade spiritual treasure, and eighteen high-grade magical treasures can be combined into one low-grade spiritual treasure. In other words, if you have five hundred high-grade magical treasures, you can refine one high-grade spiritual treasure!"

"Moreover, the more magical treasures you have, the stronger the power of 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 !"

As his words fell, the crowd erupted in commotion.

"Duobao Old Monster, are you really bringing out the trump card Dao technique of your Fenbao Cliff? Honestly, aren't you just trying to make a big profit and run?"

"Is this Dao technique of yours truly authentic?"

"Could this be a scam?"

Several Foundation Establishment True Persons questioned him directly, but Duobao Tongzi remained completely unflustered, smiling lightly as he replied, "Since I am willing to trade it, I naturally have my reasons."

"To be frank, I am seeking a strand of Earth Fiend Qi."

The moment he said this, the voices of doubt immediately disappeared.

Although the 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 Dao technique was indeed precious, compared to Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, compared to the path of Foundation Establishment True Persons, it was not worth mentioning.

"But we don't have Heavenly Gang or Earth Fiend to trade with you."

"Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend, without enough fortune they are unattainable, without enough Dao attainment they are impossible to obtain. How could they possibly be taken out for trade? Duobao, have you gone mad?"

Duobao Tongzi shook his head upon hearing this and said, "I said I am seeking a strand of Earth Fiend Qi. As for where the Earth Fiend Qi is, I have already investigated clearly. However, it is a perilous place filled with dangers, so I need a high-grade spiritual treasure that can ward off misfortune and a spiritual treasure for killing."

"You want to trade for two high-grade spiritual treasures?" someone questioned.

Duobao Tongzi waved his hand, "Not necessarily. If one high-grade spiritual treasure possesses both the wondrous abilities I require, then it can also be exchanged."

"Wishful thinking!"

In an instant, many Foundation Establishment True Persons spread out their divine sense. If not for the suppression array in the cave dwelling, it would have immediately affected the outside world.

Duobao Tongzi, however, remained calm and composed:

"The 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 is my trump card, its value is well-known. In the past, even when a True Person from the Primordial Saint Sect tried to rob me, I protected it with my life."

"Now that I am selling it, naturally I must fetch a good price."

"Of course, if anyone can offer the high-grade spiritual treasure I seek, I am willing to add more to the deal."

As his words fell, Duobao Tongzi waved his hand.

Whoosh whoosh—!

In the next moment, a wisp of yellow smoke appeared before everyone, and upon seeing clearly what it was, almost all the Foundation Establishment True Persons took a step back.

"Earth Vein Qi! Duobao Old Monster, where did you get this?"

"Don't bring that thing near me! What if I accidentally shatter it?"

"Go away, go away!"

To Foundation Establishment True Persons, Earth Vein Qi was like a pile of dung—absolutely untouchable. After all, no one wanted to have their fortune cut by heavenly punishment.

However, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes at the sight.

Earth Vein Qi, seems to be fated with me.

Lü Yang had previously used 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 to craft one, but it had already dissipated along with the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 when he used it to kill Blood Demon True Person.

Now, the more Lü Yang looked, the more he felt that the Earth Vein Qi in Duobao Tongzi's hand looked exactly like the one he had used.

Moreover, he had just cultivated the 【Mandate of Moving Mountains True Method】 , and if this Dao technique could be paired with Earth Vein Qi, its power would definitely increase significantly.

"What do you say?" Duobao Tongzi looked around and loudly declared, "This Earth Vein Qi is an excellent tool for harming others, and in critical moments, it can also be used for self-protection. Back then, when I was robbed by a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect, if it weren't for this Earth Vein Qi making him hesitate, I would have been dead."

Upon hearing this, a few Foundation Establishment True Persons immediately reacted.

That's right!

Earth Vein Qi might be like dung, but if you cover yourself with dung, most people wouldn't dare approach you. It really was a life-saving item!

Especially with a great war approaching, having Earth Vein Qi for protection would provide an extra layer of security.

With that thought, some people were tempted. However, wanting and having are two different things—they simply didn't have the high-grade spiritual treasure Duobao required.

Especially since Duobao Tongzi's attitude was extremely firm.

On the other side, Lü Yang watched him with great interest. Although this seemed like an ordinary transaction, the more he thought about it, the stranger it felt.

'Because strictly speaking, this man intended to trade his trump card and life-saving item in exchange for someone else's killing treasure and danger-sensing treasure. This was practically baiting someone to attack him after the deal, at least the True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect would definitely make a move.'

'Could this be a trap?'

Yet, he should be the only true disciple of the Primordial Saint Sect present. If this was a trap, who exactly was Duobao trying to bait?

The more Lü Yang thought about it, the more intriguing it became.

After a moment of contemplation, Lü Yang suddenly used divine sense to transmit a message to Duobao Tongzi, "I have the high-grade spiritual treasure you seek, but that alone is not enough!"

"Oh? Is that so?"

Duobao Tongzi's eyes lit up, but he maintained his composure and replied through voice transmission, "You're being too greedy. That's already my bottom price!"

"I also want a ready-made 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 !"

Lü Yang showed no courtesy, immediately making a sky-high demand. What bottom price? Who would offer their real bottom price at the start?

And he had good reason too.

"Even if 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 can combine magical treasures into a high-grade spiritual treasure, where am I supposed to gather over five hundred magical treasures with the great war looming?"

"This is acceptable."

Duobao Tongzi paused for a moment, then haggled with Lü Yang for a while longer before finally agreeing to add over a hundred high-grade magical treasures.

"One hundred and sixty-two high-grade magical treasures, enough to combine into a mid-grade spiritual treasure level 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 ," Duobao Tongzi said with a bitter face, "That's all my stock. Without them, even maintaining my own 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 at high-grade spiritual treasure level would be difficult."

Still fishing! Still fishing!

Lü Yang felt more and more that Duobao Tongzi had ulterior motives. How dare he fish for him? These local gangs were just too rude!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang directly took out the 【Abyssal Sword】 .

"This spiritual treasure has two wondrous abilities: one is 【Slaughterer of Men】 , and the other is 【Peril Walker】 . It perfectly meets your requirements. You can try refining it."

"A spiritual sword?"

Duobao Tongzi looked delighted at the sight, hurriedly taking the Abyssal Sword and examining it closely before nodding in satisfaction, "Not bad, indeed very good!"

"Deal?" Lü Yang smiled gently.

Duobao Tongzi nodded, "Deal!"

Both parties were very pleased.

Soon after, several other Foundation Establishment True Persons came forward to trade, but the response was lukewarm. After about half an hour, all the Foundation Establishment True Persons had taken their turn.

It was only then that the host of the trade, Diao Longweng, came out again to announce the end of the transaction.

Afterwards, just like when they arrived, the Foundation Establishment True Persons quietly left one by one. Before long, the spacious cave dwelling was left with only Diao Longweng and Duobao Tongzi.

Seeing this, Diao Longweng spoke solemnly, "Are you certain?"

"Certain!"

Duobao Tongzi examined the 【Abyssal Sword】 while replying in a deep voice, "To give away such a spiritual sword so casually, who else could it be but a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect?"

"That wasn't given casually," Diao Longweng shook his head. "With the conduct of those True Persons from the Primordial Saint Sect, would they easily trade away such a high-grade spiritual treasure? I fear that after leaving, they've already gone back to gather reinforcements and will soon return to strike and reclaim everything."

"Hmph! He has reinforcements, but don't we as well?"

Duobao Tongzi sneered coldly, "Han Xiang thought she hid herself well, but she doesn't realize that the stench of fox on her body couldn't escape my Smelling Dog."

"She stationed herself at Gaizhu Mountain and showed no interest in the transaction until now, when she suddenly appeared with a stranger. I knew something had changed right then."

"Primordial Saint Sect True Person, huh?"

Diao Longweng sighed, "Originally, we just wanted to use the pretext of this transaction to lure a few cultivators from Jiangbei as tokens of allegiance, but we ended up hooking a big fish instead."

"Big fish has value!"

Duobao Tongzi's expression turned fierce as he said in a deep voice, "Send word to the Dao Court for reinforcements. I will pursue him now. We absolutely cannot let that man get away."

Diao Longweng hesitated upon hearing this, "Shouldn't we wait a bit longer?"

At these words, the new and old grudges against the Primordial Saint Sect surged in Duobao Tongzi's heart. He immediately stood up with a flick of his sleeve, "The longer we wait, the greater the risk! I'll go ahead!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,652 words]

Jiangbei, Kingdom of Qing.

An old man with white hair and beard was strolling leisurely in a fragrant courtyard full of birdsong, playing with an armored scaled bird in an iron cage.

Immediately afterward, a beam of radiant light descended first.

"Old Freak Hua, even the True Person of the Demon Sect has personally given orders to mobilize, and nearly half of Jiangbei has been stirred up."

"Yet you seem to be in high spirits, still in the mood to take your bird for a walk here."

From within the radiant light, a middle-aged man stepped out leisurely.

This so-called Old Freak Hua, actually had some reputation in Jiangbei.

He was the Sect Master of the Five Elements Sect, with cultivation at the mid Foundation Establishment Realm, known as the True Person of the Five Elements.

At this moment, the True Person of the Five Elements, carrying the birdcage, laughed and said:

“When soldiers come, we block them; when water comes, we cover it with earth. Summer Weiming, have you finished relocating your family?”

“The entire Zhao Xia Clan has already moved into the Kingdom of Qing.”

“The Five Elements Sect should be the same, right?”

“No matter what, we can only walk this single path to the end.”

After speaking, the middle-aged man seemed to show a hint of melancholy.

“Hmph, so what if we walk this single path to the end?”

At this moment, another voice rang out.

This time, the one who stepped out was a young man.

“Under the rule of the Demon Sect, we already have no path of survival.”

“Joining the Dao Court, at least we have a chance to fight for our future!”

“Old Freak Chen.”

Summer Weiming sighed when he saw the person.

The other was named Chen Anze, also the ancestor of an Immortal Clan like him.

Moreover, the reputation of the Yuan Chen Clan was far greater than that of the Zhao Xia Clan.

After a moment, a fragrant breeze suddenly arrived.

Next, wisps of mist floated within the courtyard, then condensed into human form, and quickly dispersed again.

From within walked out a lady in palace attire.

“Fairy Yun He of the Cloud-Climbing Sect has come as well.”

“What about the Upper Profound Sword Sect?”

Before the words of the True Person of the Five Elements had even finished, a sharp sword cry suddenly echoed from the sky.

Then a beam of sword light swiftly descended, transforming into a human figure who stepped out.

At a glance, it was a young man with sword-like eyebrows and starry eyes, his expression cold and stern.

A golden sword on his back continuously radiated sharp sword energy.

The True Person of the Five Elements clicked his tongue in admiration.

“It’s said that the Upper Profound Sword Sect has received support from Jiangnan and possesses three superior magical swords.”

“It truly lives up to its reputation.”

“Golden Sword Master of the Upper Profound Sword Sect greets Senior Hua.”

The young man cupped his hands toward the True Person of the Five Elements.

“Our Sect Master is currently still in seclusion, striving to break through to the late Foundation Establishment Realm, so he couldn’t come to meet you, Senior.”

“No matter, no matter.”

The True Person of the Five Elements waved his hand, his eyes brightening.

“If your fellow Daoist from the Upper Profound Sword Sect can break through to the late stage and attain the rank of Great True Person, it will greatly aid our war effort.”

Next, everyone settled themselves within the courtyard.

Five Foundation Establishment cultivators stood there, clearly led by the True Person of the Five Elements.

After all, he alone had reached the mid Foundation Establishment Realm, while the others—Summer Weiming, Chen Anze, Fairy Yun He, and the Golden Sword Master—were all at the early stage.

Just then, all five suddenly felt an indescribable sense of oppression in their hearts.

With each breath, the spiritual energy of heaven and earth, which had previously flowed freely at their command, suddenly slipped from their control.

The spiritual energy abandoned them like worn-out shoes, rushing toward another direction.

They saw a handsome young man walking toward them.

“Top Scholar.”

The True Person of the Five Elements was the first to cup his hands in greeting.

The other four hurriedly followed suit.

The handsome young man appeared quite friendly and returned the salute to each of them one by one with sincerity.

“Junior Zhong Xin greets all the seniors.”

“No need to be so polite.”

The True Person of the Five Elements shook his head.

“Top Scholar Zhong is the current top scorer in the imperial examinations and is deeply trusted by His Majesty.”

“So young, yet already holds the position of a third-rank official.”

As he spoke, the True Person of the Five Elements glanced at Zhong Xin.

He had cultivated a divine eye technique that allowed him to see things invisible to ordinary people.

At this moment, when he looked at Zhong Xin, he could see the dense official aura around him.

It had condensed into cloud cranes and fierce tigers, circling and guarding his body.

Above his head floated a distinct official title:

【Prefect of the Shun Dao Heavenly Office】

This title ranked third in the Kingdom of Qing, overseeing all affairs of the capital.

It showed his high status and authority.

With the blessing of his official position, he had achieved the early Foundation Establishment Realm.

And this was only in the small land of the Kingdom of Qing.

After all, the Kingdom of Qing had modeled its system after the Dao Court.

However, due to its limited territory and small population, it could not truly reach the scale of the Dao Court.

If this were the Dao Court in Jiangdong, a third-rank official would truly be a “Heavenly Official,” typically starting at the late Foundation Establishment Realm as a Great True Person.

How could they only have early-stage cultivation?

In fact, throughout the entire Kingdom of Qing, only the current King Qing had managed to condense an official position comparable to a late Foundation Establishment Great True Person.

Nevertheless, such easily attained cultivation was still something many envied.

In the next moment, this third-rank Top Scholar of the Kingdom of Qing, Zhong Xin, asked curiously:

“Seniors, may I ask what major matter requires our discussion this time?”

“It concerns the incoming enemy from Jiangbei.”

The True Person of the Five Elements collected his thoughts and solemnly took out a flying message.

“My two friends in Jiangbei, whom I have recruited, have sent word that they encountered a True Person from the Demon Sect.”

“This friend of mine has invited us to go there together.”

“My friend is no weakling, also at the mid Foundation Establishment Realm.”

“For him to seek help in besieging someone, that person is most likely also at the mid stage.”

“Not to mention they come from the Demon Sect.”

“I suspect that this person might very well be the one leading the Demon Sect’s campaign against our kingdom!”

The True Person of the Five Elements had fully aligned himself with the Kingdom of Qing.

Though he was also from Jiangbei, his words now clearly placed himself on Qing’s side.

Seeing this, Zhong Xin revealed a look of temptation.

“Senior means to say?”

“I intend to go and besiege them!”

Latest chapter first released at 69 Books Bar!

The True Person of the Five Elements raised his eyebrows and said loudly:

“With the great war approaching, if we can first kill a True Person of the Demon Sect, we will surely deal a heavy blow to the enemy’s morale.”

Zhong Xin showed hesitation at these words.

After thinking for a long time, he shook his head.

“The Dao Court’s Star Observation Platform has sent orders.”

“They say that True Person Chong Guang of the Demon Sect has already reincarnated.”

“Our top priority should be to locate Chong Guang’s reincarnation.”

“Senior, your side just needs to hold the defense.”

“Top Scholar Zhong, you are mistaken!”

The True Person of the Five Elements shook his head.

Hold the defense?

How could one gain merit by merely defending!

He had led the entire Five Elements Sect to join the Kingdom of Qing and submit to the Dao Court in hopes of securing a future for himself.

He had to achieve some merits.

And killing a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect would undoubtedly be a great merit.

Otherwise, if they won the war and someone else captured Chong Guang’s reincarnation and claimed the greatest credit, while they were seen as mere passive defenders?

They might be branded as freeloaders!

Therefore, the True Person of the Five Elements was eager to fight.

He wished he could rush out immediately and slay a few True Persons of the Demon Sect to let the Dao Court see his hard work and contributions.

And he was not the only one thinking this way.

The other four Foundation Establishment True Persons, who had also joined the Dao Court and come to assist the Kingdom of Qing against the Primordial Saint Sect, shared the same intention.

Seeing this, Zhong Xin could only nod helplessly.

“I understand.”

“I can agree to this.”

“But since you will be going deep into enemy territory, I ask that you all be extremely cautious.”

“If things go wrong, retreat quickly.”

“Do not let yourselves fall into the Demon Sect’s territory in Jiangbei.”

“Rest assured, Top Scholar!”

Having received Zhong Xin’s permission, the True Person of the Five Elements immediately showed an excited expression.

He turned to the others and declared:

“Everyone, our chance to make a name for ourselves has come!”

After leaving the trading fair, Lü Yang flew toward Gai Bamboo Mountain.

However, he was in no hurry and instead flew slowly with his light, looking relaxed and at ease.

“By now, they should be catching up, right?”

“If they truly harbor ill intentions and come after me to kill me, then it wouldn’t count as me ambushing them halfway, but as legitimate self-defense.”

“No matter how you put it, I would be in the right.”

That’s right, Lü Yang was fishing.

“These Jiangbei rogue cultivators are still too young.”

“These tricks might fool someone like Wu Cang, who is also a rogue cultivator and a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect.”

“But trying to fool me is still too naive.”

“Let alone me, even True Person Yinshan wouldn’t be fooled.”

Before long, he saw a beam of light appear in the distance, flying straight toward him.

Lü Yang revealed a smile and simply clasped his hands behind his back, standing still in place.

“The fish has taken the bait!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 207: Playing Tricks with My Primordial Saint Sect?

[1,697 words]

"You actually didn't run?"

Seeing Lü Yang standing there with his hands behind his back, Duobao Tongzi dispersed his escape light, his face turning iron-blue as he instinctively released his divine sense to scan the surroundings.

"Something's not right. No ambush?"

Duobao Tongzi looked confused.

To be fair, seeing Lü Yang with no intention of escaping at all, he thought he had been lured into a trap and had fallen into an ambush, but it turned out not to be the case.

On the other side, Lü Yang also furrowed his brows. "Why are you alone?"

Wasn't there also that Old Man Dragon Fisher?

Didn't come together? Not allies?

Or perhaps...

The next second, Lü Yang relaxed his expression. If the other party truly had ties to the Dao Court, they probably went south to **【Kingdom of Qing】** to find reinforcements.

If that was the case, was there an even bigger fish?

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's expression became even calmer. "As expected of a countryside rogue cultivator, utterly without morals. You make a deal one moment, and come to rob and kill the next."

This statement immediately struck a nerve in Duobao Tongzi, making his expression extremely ugly. "You, a Demon Sect True Person, dare to preach to me about morals? Surface-level deals, backstabbing robberies, collecting countless rare treasures without paying a single coin—aren't these exactly the things you Demon Sect True Persons excel at?"

"You can even recognize me?"

Lü Yang deliberately furrowed his brows, then suddenly put on a stern expression. "You really have guts, knowing I am from the Primordial Saint Sect and still daring to chase me down to kill me?"

"Die, Demon Sect!"

Duobao Tongzi suddenly let out a furious shout, and a round mirror appeared behind his head. The mirror light shone down, revealing a flying message light.

"Hahahaha!"

In the next moment, Duobao Tongzi waved his hand, intercepting the flying message light. Sweeping it with his divine sense, he immediately burst into laughter. "So it was just a bluff!"

The flying message turned out to be a distress signal. In Duobao Tongzi's eyes, it was clear that this Demon Sect True Person was merely pretending to be calm while secretly trying to call for reinforcements. However, he hadn't expected Duobao Tongzi's superior methods to intercept it!

With this thought, all suspicion left Duobao Tongzi's mind.

"Today, you won't even dream of escaping!"

As his words fell, dazzling treasure light burst forth behind Duobao Tongzi. The treasure light gathered into waves, surging like a tidal river, instantly transforming into a long river.

【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 !

This river was entirely composed of treasure light, with countless artifacts floating within—blades, spears, swords, halberds, towers, bells, cauldrons, and furnaces—seemingly endless.

Then the long river swept downward. Lü Yang immediately felt a massive force descending upon him. For a moment, he couldn't steady himself, stumbled, and fell into the river, after which the artifacts in the river pounced on him one after another, bombarding him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The bombardments of countless magical treasures struck Lü Yang, but only produced dazzling sparks. Lü Yang remained unmoved, like a reef under crashing waves.

"What a fine 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 ."

Lü Yang looked on with intrigue, observing the hundreds of magical treasures within the river. These weren't just randomly selected artifacts; each was crafted with great care.

Individually, these treasures weren't particularly rare.

However, they complemented each other, and when combined and activated with secret techniques, they could indeed harness the power of the stars and earth, displaying superior mystical effects!

Unfortunately, it was still too conservative, like a small workshop.

"Named Ten Thousand Treasures, it should truly contain ten thousand artifacts to be worthy of being called a river. A mere five hundred pieces can only be considered a stream."

Of course, this was understandable.

After all, Duobao Tongzi was merely the sect master of a small sect in northern Jiang. Having five hundred artifacts was already impressive; possessing ten thousand would be asking too much.

However, the Primordial Saint Sect was different!

The Saint Sect had a specialized artifact refinement department, filled with talents, working around the clock without rest, easily capable of fulfilling the demands of a true Ten Thousand Treasures River!

"And with only a few hundred pieces, the flaws are too obvious."

Lü Yang shook his head, then took out the Wasp Pouch, opened its mouth, and instantly, a swarm of black Qi-Eating Insects poured out.

Lü Yang had always kept in mind the legend of the Qi-Eating Insects mentioned by Elder You, never ceasing their cultivation. Now, he released them all at once. Billions of Qi-Eating Insects, like starving tigers pouncing on prey, swarmed the treasure light of the 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 , heedless of casualties, biting relentlessly.

Seeing this, Duobao Tongzi's expression changed drastically.

"What kind of demonic insect is this?"

Although his 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 could refine countless artifacts into a superior spirit treasure, at its core, it was still composed of hundreds of individual artifacts.

Thus, flaws still existed between the artifacts.

The Qi-Eating Insects, being able to slip through any gap, targeted these flaws and gnawed at the treasure light. Although a single insect's damage was negligible...

There were simply too many of them!

Realizing this, Duobao Tongzi hastily performed a hand seal. The 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 trembled violently, countless artifacts clashing together, producing a mystical sound.

【Treasure Chime Sound】 !

With the activation of this mystical effect, the sound of chimes echoed unceasingly throughout heaven and earth. This sound was generated by the collision of the hundreds of artifacts within the 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 , carrying a peculiar resonance force. Wherever it passed, the Qi-Eating Insects could not control their bodies, bursting apart from within.

"Interesting..."

Seeing this, Lü Yang showed a curious expression. Through his divine sense, he knew that besides the mystical properties of the artifacts, the opponent had likely also used an innate divine ability.

However, the specific divine ability had been deliberately concealed by Duobao Tongzi.

'Unfortunately, this matter concerns the success or failure of True Person Chong Guang's pursuit of gold, and True Lord Qingcheng Feixue personally took action to

conceal the heavenly secrets. Even a Foundation Establishment True Person is powerless to calculate causality.'

Lü Yang pondered in his heart, yet his hands did not slow down. With a wave of his sleeve, a purple-golden official seal hovered in the air. It was the 【Purple Star Official Descending Supreme Gold Seal】 , a magical treasure gifted to him by Ying Tongshou when he was overseas, particularly effective in suppressing metal artifacts.

"Set!"

Lü Yang performed a seal and pointed, and the 【Purple Star Official Descending Supreme Gold Seal】 came crashing down with the might of Mount Tai, pressing directly on the raging 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 .

In the next second, the 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 suddenly froze.

All artifacts, being made of metal, were severely suppressed by the 【Purple Star Official Descending Supreme Gold Seal】 . With one strike, the mystical effect was instantly lost!

Seeing this, Duobao Tongzi narrowed his eyes. "Demon Sect..."

His eyes showed both greed and hatred, but soon after, he revealed a joyful expression, looked up at the sky, and burst into laughter. "Hahaha! Your death is at hand!"

As his words fell, several more escape lights broke through the sky!

When the lights landed, Old Man Dragon Fisher, True Person of Five Elements, and others stepped out one after another—a total of six Foundation Establishment True Persons, including two at mid-Foundation Establishment!

Including Duobao Tongzi, that made three at mid-Foundation Establishment!

In an instant, a massive force locked down the void, firmly trapping Lü Yang in place, ensuring he had nowhere to escape, not even into the Foundation Establishment realm.

"Fellow Daoist Duobao, this time you've truly rendered great merit."

True Person of Five Elements laughed heartily, and Duobao Tongzi looked equally relaxed. Even the most cautious Old Man Dragon Fisher couldn't help but sigh in relief.

No matter how one looked at it, victory was assured.

Seven Foundation Establishment True Persons—three mid-stage and four early-stage—almost half of 【Kingdom of Qing】's Foundation Establishment forces, surrounding a single Primordial Saint Sect True Person.

Even if the Saint Sect True Persons were renowned for their strength.

The power disparity was seven to one, the advantage was ours!

Yet just as everyone believed the outcome was sealed, Lü Yang suddenly laughed. "Indeed, Fellow Daoist Duobao, you truly have rendered great merit!"

Duobao Tongzi was stunned. "What?"

Before the words had fully fallen, an even greater force suddenly erupted outside the encirclement formed by the seven Foundation Establishment True Persons, reversing the situation and encircling them instead!

"Ah!"

In the next second, among the four early-stage True Persons, Ancestor of the Zhaoxia Clan, Xia Weiming, let out a miserable scream as his chest was violently pierced by a massive hand!

Xia Weiming's reaction was not slow. His Dharma body shattered, transforming into countless streams of light, swiftly reassembling beside True Person of Five Elements. However, his expression was filled with extreme terror. That strike had not only pierced his Dharma body but also shattered his Dao foundation!

This nearly crippled ninety percent of his strength, almost killing him outright!

"...Quite good at escaping."

Among the crowd, True Person Yinshan's expression was gloomy, his tone devoid of any emotion as he shook his hand. "Forget it. Severely injuring one is enough."

On the other side, Lü Yang laughed heartily. "Senior Brother, why did you take so long?"

True Person Yinshan finally curled his lips into a smile. "Wasting a bit of time finding people, but we've truly hooked a big school of fish this time."

As his words fell, outside the encirclement of the seven Foundation Establishment True Persons from 【Kingdom of Qing】, several figures stepped out, their auras erupting. They were the Foundation Establishment True Persons who had just left the trading conference. Besides the mid-stage Foundation Establishment Han Xiang, there was also a valiant woman in battle gear.

From the very start, Lü Yang and True Person Yinshan had sensed something was wrong.

Or rather, they had suspected something. And in true Saint Sect fashion, they drew the bow before painting the target, ensuring they had contingencies in place.

Thus, while Lü Yang served as bait, True Person Yinshan secretly gathered cultivators from northern Jiang, setting up a hidden ambush, just waiting for the fish to take the hook!

"A bunch of Jiangdong rats, daring to play tricks with my Primordial Saint Sect?"

"Overestimating yourselves!"

Seeing this, True Person of Five Elements' face instantly turned deathly pale. Recalling Lü Yang's earlier words, he abruptly turned around, glaring viciously at Duobao Tongzi.

"You betrayed me!?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 208: This Is No Longer an Ordinary Rogue Cultivator!

[1,425 words]

"I am not! I did not!"

At this moment, Duobao Child felt extremely wronged and hurriedly turned to look at Old Man Dragon Angler beside him. "Fellow Daoist Dragon Angler, you know me. You can testify for me!"

"This..."

Old Man Dragon Angler opened his mouth upon hearing this, then lowered his voice and said, "Fellow Daoist Five Elements, I think no matter what, Duobao Child wouldn't betray you at this moment."

As soon as these words came out, the originally furious True Person of Five Elements also snapped back to his senses.

Not to mention that Duobao Child had once been robbed by a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect in the past, bearing a deep blood feud that could not be faked, making it highly unlikely he would betray them.

Even if he truly had betrayed them, this was not the time to expose it and shake the army's morale.

"...It was my slip of the tongue."

True Person of Five Elements let out a long breath and quickly regained his composure. "This time it must be the Primordial Saint Sect's cunning scheme, deliberately setting a trap to lure us in."

"I miscalculated for a moment, which led all of you into danger."

"But everyone, rest assured, since this is my fault, I will naturally make amends. Later, when we break out, I will stay behind to cover you all, and I will definitely bring you back safely!"

With just a few words, True Person of Five Elements quickly stabilized the crowd.

After that, his gaze swept around and immediately grasped the key point. "The True Person of the Demon Sect who is now surrounded by us should be the one in charge of this operation."

"He used himself as bait to lure us into the trap."

"But by doing so, he has also fallen into our encirclement."

"At this point, the only option is to strike him first, using overwhelming force to pressure the other True Persons of the Demon Sect to come to his rescue, thereby creating a chance for us to break out!"

From this perspective, True Person of Five Elements still showed the insight of a seasoned veteran.

In fact, things were just as he had anticipated.

Although Lü Yang was indeed using himself as bait this time, True Person Yinshan would never sacrifice him in exchange for victory.

If Lü Yang truly faced a life-and-death crisis, Yinshan would certainly abandon the encirclement and rescue Lü Yang first.

However, True Person of Five Elements had only misjudged one thing.

—Lü Yang's strength.

"Boom!"

In an instant, the mana collision of more than ten Foundation Establishment True Persons, even in the high sky, caused the ground below to crack as if an earth dragon was turning over.

Almost all the Foundation Establishment True Persons felt their vision go dark.

Their released divine senses were completely shattered by the impact, making it seem as if time had come to a standstill.

They could hear nothing, see nothing, and only after a long while did their senses gradually return.

One by one, they focused their eyes on the scene in the field.

What surprised them, however, was that both sides were completely unscathed.

On the side of True Person of Five Elements, a large umbrella floated in mid-air.

Five-colored light swirled on the umbrella's surface, with the five elements rotating, firmly protecting the people beneath it.

"What a superb spiritual treasure!"

Seeing this, even True Person Yinshan showed a trace of surprise. "Although it's a small sect, it's not entirely without merit."

However, on the other side, True Person of Five Elements secretly cried out in his heart.

"That was close..."

This 【Mixed Yuan Five Elements Umbrella】 was the supreme treasure passed down through generations in the Five Elements Sect.

Not only was it a superb spiritual treasure, but it also contained two mysterious abilities.

Standing under the umbrella, it was said to overcome all five elements, making all methods ineffective.

Yet after just one strike, cracks had already appeared on the umbrella.

The originally continuous five-element radiance had developed significant flaws.

If they were struck two or three more times, the treasure would shatter, and they would die with it!

At this thought, True Person of Five Elements looked toward Lü Yang again, full of expectation.

After taking their combined full-power strike, Lü Yang should have been seriously injured by now, right?

And then he saw a scene that made his eyes nearly burst.

As the smoke and dust cleared, Lü Yang stood calmly in his black robe, smiling as he said, "Is that all you've got? Did you skip breakfast before coming out?"

"Impossible!"

True Person of Five Elements' pupils shrank on the spot, and the others also widened their eyes in disbelief.

They knew that apart from True Person of Five Elements defending against other attacks, the remaining six of them had already gone all out without holding back in the slightest.

Not to mention that among them were Old Man Dragon Angler and Duobao Child, both mid-Foundation Establishment cultivators.

How could anyone possibly withstand such a combined strike?

Even if the opponent was also at mid-Foundation Establishment, their magical body should have been damaged at the very least.

But looking at Lü Yang, he appeared completely unscathed!

On the other side, Lü Yang casually brushed the dust off his black robe.

【Hundredfold Calamity-Resisting Black Robe】 !

This was the spiritual treasure that Ye Xingfeng had given him before dying overseas.

Its mystical ability **【Hundredfold Resistance】** could block any attack a hundred times!

This was the benefit of being obscured by the heavenly secrets.

Because the strengths and weaknesses of this **【Hundredfold Calamity-Resisting Black Robe】** were very clear.

Its strength was that no matter how powerful the attack, it could block it a hundred times.

Its weakness was that even the weakest attack could consume one of those defenses.

In other words, the best way to break this treasure was not a single full-power strike but thousands of small attacks in a short period.

However, with the heavenly secrets obscured, even Foundation Establishment True Persons could not calculate the causality.

Naturally, no one could figure out the flaw of the 【Hundredfold Calamity-Resisting Black Robe】 .

At most, they could suspect something was wrong and would need time to slowly probe and find the flaw.

But how could Lü Yang possibly give them that chance?

In the next second, Lü Yang spoke in a deep voice, "Rogue cultivator Dragon Angler, colluding with Jiangdong Dao Court to harm a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect."

Latest novel first published at 69shu8.com!

"This is no longer an ordinary rogue cultivator, but a lawless demon! Against such a demon, my Saint Sect must strike with full force!"

Upon hearing this, Old Man Dragon Angler nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

Heavens! A True Person of the Saint Sect called me a demon!?

And what does this have to do with me?

The one chasing you was Duobao Child!

For a moment, everyone couldn't help but glance at Duobao Child again.

Both were traitors, so why did Lü Yang name Dragon Angler and not him?

Duobao Child's face immediately turned beet red. "This is the Demon Sect's scheme to sow discord!"

"I am not a traitor!"

Everyone quickly averted their eyes.

That's right, they all understood the reasoning.

But who knew if this was a counter-scheme?

Their lives were on the line—what if it was true? Wouldn't they all be dragged to their deaths?

At this thought, even Old Man Dragon Angler, who was closest to Duobao Child, silently distanced himself, not daring to let him get too close.

Seeing this, True Person of Five Elements couldn't help but look at Lü Yang and sigh, "The Demon Sect... truly lives up to its name!"

Such an open and blatant scheme!

Even when seen through, understood, and exposed, no one could escape its effects.

Even he himself could not suppress the doubt in his heart at this moment.

On the other side, Duobao Child was utterly furious.

For a moment, he seemed to recall the humiliation of being robbed midway by a True Person of the Primordial Saint Sect in his youth, stripped of all his clothes.

In an instant, he lost all reason.

"Beast!"

With a furious roar, Duobao Child could no longer hold back and charged out from the crowd.

The 【Myriad Treasures River】 surged, rushing toward Lü Yang.

Almost at the same time, True Person of Five Elements' expression changed drastically. "Careful! Come back!"

In fact, before he even shouted, Duobao Child had already regained his senses.

He felt a chill in his heart as his eyes met Lü Yang's smiling gaze.

'Divine ability, he used a divine ability to lure me just now!?'

【Resolution of Suspicion】 !

For those standing at the edge of a cliff, sometimes all it took was a gentle push to make them fall into the abyss, never to return.

At this moment, everyone clearly sensed the killing intent permeating the heavens and earth.

And Duobao Child felt it most acutely.

'He wants to kill me!?'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 209: Still, Crushing the Weak Was More Enjoyable

[1,434 words]

At this moment, when he met Lü Yang's smiling eyes, the sense of crisis in Duo Bao Child's heart soared violently, as if he had seen his own end.

However, the first emotion he felt was not fear.

It was mockery.

'Just you, trying to kill me?'

How could a Foundation Establishment mid-stage True Person be so easily killed?

Not to mention, although Duo Bao Child came from a small sect, he was still a True Person with a lineage.

Ordinary rogue cultivators, without orthodox inheritance, would immerse themselves in bitter cultivation upon gaining some incomplete techniques, regardless of flaws.

As a result, their innate divine abilities and life-bound divine abilities would often specialize in a single domain.

Though strong, they had more weaknesses.

Once someone discovered them, it would be easy to suffer destruction of body and Dao.

The typical example of this was Wu Cang.

Yet, Foundation Establishment was without regrets.

Once the Dao path was set, it could not be changed.

So most rogue cultivators could only roam for a while and could never compare to disciples of prestigious sects.

After all, who could start over again?

In contrast, Duo Bao Daoist was different.

He was the direct descendant of Fen Bao Cliff, having climbed to the position of Sect Master.

The divine abilities he cultivated naturally could not be as flawed as those of rogue cultivators.

In the next second, Duo Bao Daoist twisted his body on the spot.

“ **【Universal Walk】** !”

This innate divine ability belonged to the Zhaoyang position in the Tiangang constellation.

It was a Gui Water divine ability, also a divine escape technique, capable of borrowing the energy of earth and wood to flee.

At this moment, as Duo Bao Daoist activated it, he was about to escape.

However, in the next instant, his movements suddenly stalled.

In a trance, it was as if he saw a great mountain pressing down from the void, rapidly extinguishing the divine brilliance on his body.

【Mountain Embrace Seal】 !

This profound technique could unconditionally seal one innate or life-bound divine ability.

Almost instantly, it threw Duo Bao Daoist into an even more dangerous situation.

Between Lü Yang's brows, a glimmer of spiritual light had already appeared.

【Star River Sword Pill】 !

This was likewise a relic left to him by Ye Xingfeng of the Sword Pavilion.

Though severely damaged, with only the 【Barrier Breaking】 function remaining, it was still incomparably sharp.

Under the sword light, Duo Bao Daoist could not help but squint his eyes.

His eyes stung and teared up from the sword light.

His skin felt as if pricked by needles.

And this was only from looking directly at the Sword Pill.

If Lü Yang truly slashed with this sword, Duo Bao Daoist would undoubtedly die!

In that split second, Duo Bao Daoist could only think of one thing.

In the next instant, a crimson spiritual sword appeared in his hand.

Brilliance flickered on it, blocking the sword light Lü Yang unleashed.

【Abi Sword】 !

“Hahaha, demon, in the end, man proposes but heaven disposes!”

At this moment, Duo Bao Child’s heart was full of joy.

“You never expected that the spiritual treasure you originally intended to trap me with would turn around and save my life, did you?”

With this spiritual sword in hand, what was there to fear?

Even if Lü Yang slashed with all his might, he could slash back as well.

Even if he fell into a disadvantage and was no match, he would not be decapitated in one strike.

With this thought, Duo Bao Child immediately poured all his mana into the sword.

And the 【Abi Sword】 transformed into a devouring beast, crazily consuming Duo Bao Child’s mana, while the sword light it emitted grew grander and mightier.

——All of this happened in an instant.

In the next moment, the Five Elements True Person once again opened the 【Primordial Five Elements Umbrella】 , blocking Yinshan and the others, while the rest came to aid Duo Bao Child.

“Kill!”

In an instant, the six True Persons joined forces once more.

The surging divine brilliance flooded everything, shattering divine senses, and the surroundings once again plunged into dimness.

However, when everything became clear again, everyone was stunned.

Lü Yang had disappeared.

Immediately after, they saw Fairy Yun He of the Panyun Sect staring in astonishment at Duo Bao Child.

“Duo Bao... why didn't you strike just now?”

Everyone looked over.

Only then did they realize that just now, when everyone had joined forces to attack, Duo Bao Child, who should have struck the most decisively, had stood dumbly in place.

The 【Abi Sword】 in his hand shone brightly, yet he had not swung it, instead stuck there stiffly.

“No... I... I can't control it...!”

They saw Duo Bao Child sweating profusely, desperately trying to suppress the 【Abi Sword】 in his hand.

Then they watched in horror as a third profound pattern emerged on the sword.

【Named Artifact】 .

From the very beginning, the ownership of the 【Abi Sword】 had always belonged to Lü Yang.

Unless he willingly relinquished it, no amount of refinement was more than an illusion.

Duo Bao Child suddenly realized the truth.

The 【Abi Sword】 had merely been toying with him all along.

Everything had been under the master's command.

“...Beast!”

Duo Bao Child let out an unwilling roar.

Yet, more than half of his mana had already been poured into the 【Abi Sword】 , leaving him powerless to resist.

In the next moment, they saw the 【Abi Sword】 reverse its blade.

—And pointed it toward Old Man Dragon Fisher.

“...Huh?”

At this moment, Old Man Dragon Fisher’s spiritual perception and logical thought became severely disjointed.

By all reason, having a sword pointed at him should be dangerous.

However, his spiritual perception kept insisting that there was no issue, no danger, that he was perfectly safe, and that it was all just an illusion.

Until a sword light pierced through the crown of his head.

Sfx note left in Chinese website's watermark format.

“Pfft!”

The sword light silently passed through his skull.

It cut through his brow, nose bridge, lips, teeth, neck, chest, abdomen, and down to his lower body.

Almost simultaneously, the 【Abi Sword】 was fully unsheathed!

The crimson sword light flashed and disappeared, becoming the final straw that broke the camel’s back.

Old Man Dragon Fisher didn’t even have time to summon his spiritual treasure or use his divine ability!

At this moment, there was only one thought left in his mind:

‘Why me?’

I had been cautious enough.

I wasn’t the first to pursue him.

I wasn't the one who had uttered harsh words.

From beginning to end, I had kept the lowest profile.

Yet, it was me who was killed!

Why!?

I refuse to accept this!

Countless grievances and resentments surged in Old Man Dragon Fisher's heart, only to be slashed away by a single sword strike.

Lü Yang's figure emerged, surrounded by divine brilliance flowing all over his body.

It was a brand-new divine brilliance.

Even Yinshan True Person, upon seeing this divine brilliance, revealed a look of shock and stared at Lü Yang with disbelief.

"The second innate divine ability...?"

【Star Concealing Radiance】 !

Strictly speaking, it was not a second innate ability.

It was simulated using the **【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Command】** , yet at the critical moment, it had become Lü Yang's killing move!

【Star Concealing Radiance】 .

At the moment when yang fire was born and yin fire retreated, when the rising sun emerged and the stars hid.

Causality became obscure, hard to reveal its light.

It could conceal causality, qi flow, and mask the crisis sense of Foundation Establishment True Persons.

Thus, Duo Bao Child sensed killing intent, but Old Man Dragon Fisher had no reaction at all!

From the start, Lü Yang's target had been him.

Old Man Dragon Fisher was confused, but to Lü Yang, it was the simplest choice.

Because among everyone present, only he was a rogue cultivator.

Rogue cultivators were the easiest to kill.

If not you, then who?

Even so, just to be safe, Lü Yang had used the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Command】 to temporarily raise his cultivation to the peak of Foundation Establishment mid-stage.

In addition, he had activated the 【Abi Sword】's hidden trick.

It looked effortless on the surface, but in reality, he had gone all out with a two-pronged strategy, allowing him to slay Old Man Dragon Fisher under everyone's watchful eyes with a single sword strike!

In the next moment, a loud explosion rang out!

“Boom!”

Old Man Dragon Fisher's dharma body exploded with a thunderous roar.

The sword light shredded every drop of his flesh and blood.

Even his Dao foundation was devoured clean by the 【Abi Sword】.

Nothing was wasted.

Bathed in the myriad streaks of divine light from his opponent's fall, Lü Yang squinted his eyes in satisfaction.

“Sure enough, crushing the weak is still the most enjoyable...”

Without 【Star Concealing Radiance】 masking the enemy's perception, he really might not have been able to kill Old Man Dragon Fisher.

But with 【Star Concealing Radiance】, everything had fallen into place.

In the end, it was because of the blessing of the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal Doushuai True Command】 that his realm had been elevated.

Bullying the weak with superior strength, how could he not be invincible?

Challenging across realms should naturally be unstoppable!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 210: I Want to Personally Interrogate the Captives!

[1,499 words]

In the broad daylight, under a cloudless sky.

Or rather, there should have been clouds, but they had all been swept away by that earlier sword strike, revealing the vast spectacle above the dome of heaven.

However, at this moment, no one cared.

Compared to the bright sky, all eyes were focused on the sword light of 【Abyss Sword】 in Lü Yang's hand, feeling nothing but bone-chilling cold.

As Lü Yang's gaze swept across the surroundings, everyone unconsciously held their breath.

Time seemed to freeze at this moment.

Even the previously furious Duobao Child, who had wished to kill him on the spot, now showed only wordless panic on his face.

Lü Yang did not speak.

Everyone remained silent.

“Splash, splash!”

The clear sound of rain broke the silence, each drop transformed from the shattered Dharma body of the Dragon Hook Elder, merging completely into the spiritual energy of heaven and earth.

Looking around, one could see the spiritual tides surging.

It felt as if even heaven and earth were cheering, surrounding the cloaked young man holding the sword, making all the other True Persons seem dim in comparison.

“Swish!”

A streak of light flashed across the sky, shimmering in five colors.

It was the figure of the Five Elements True Person.

Yet, he turned his head not even once and disappeared from the battlefield.

It was only then that the others understood why the Five Elements True Person had dared to volunteer to cover the retreat.

It turned out he had a special talisman for escaping.

However, facing Lü Yang’s gaze, he was so terrified that he didn’t even dare to engage in combat and immediately activated the talisman to flee!

‘What is there left to fight for!’

The Five Elements True Person knew his own limits.

If he had taken the Dragon Hook Elder’s place just now, the best outcome would have been leaving behind only a remnant soul!

‘Mid-stage Foundation Establishment at its peak, possessing superior spiritual treasures, gifted divine powers that seem to seal others’ abilities, and a life-bound divine ability that appears to manipulate hearts and minds.

The Demon Sect is truly shameless!

How could they let someone like this out?

Whose direct disciple has come to 【Kingdom of Qing】 to gain merit?’

‘What a beast!’

The Five Elements True Person cursed furiously in his heart while fleeing at top speed.

As for his earlier claim of covering the retreat, it had long been thrown to the back of his mind.

I am a demonic cultivator from Jiangbei, under the rule of the Primordial Saint Sect.

It is well known that I never keep my promises!

As the Five Elements True Person fled, it was like pressing a switch.

In the blink of an eye, Duobao Child and the others who had been huddled together scattered like startled birds and beasts!

Everyone began to flee!

However, the True Person of Yinshan had been waiting on the outskirts for a long time, along with Han Xiang and another heroic woman at the mid-stage Foundation Establishment Realm.

They struck together to block the fleeing enemies.

The other early-stage Foundation Establishment True Persons of Jiangbei also charged in with joy, as this was clearly a heaven-sent opportunity for merit!

At the same time, Lü Yang let out a deep breath, finally recovering his strength.

He had not refrained from attacking earlier just to show off.

In truth, he had expended too much energy in his full-powered strike that killed the Dragon Hook Elder and had yet to recover.

He had no choice but to stay silent and act like an expert.

To be honest, he had even prepared to use the 【Hundred Refinements Danger-Avoiding Cloak】 to endure a siege.

Yet, he never expected this group to be so frightened by him.

“Eastern Jiang rats.”

Lü Yang shook his head.

The 【Abyss Sword】 in his hand let out an extremely excited sword cry.

Countless sword lights rose from within, manifesting a profound mystery.

【Butcher of Men】 !

The death of the Dragon Hook Elder had greatly enhanced this mysterious power.

As the sword’s master, Lü Yang could clearly feel that, since the Dragon Hook Elder’s Dao foundation was of the water element, from now on, the 【Abyss Sword】 would have an additional threefold restraint against all water-element beings!

“Just the right time to test it.”

Lü Yang's gaze shifted, locking onto a fleeing streak of light.

Judging by its aura, that person's Dao foundation was also of the water element, making them perfectly restrained by him!

With that thought, Lü Yang immediately raised the **【Abyss Sword】** .

“A sword is not only for stabbing or slashing in combat, but it can also serve as a medium for casting spells.

Using the **【Abyss Sword】** to cast Dao techniques actually provides some enhancement.”

In the next second, a brilliant light radiated from the sword.

“ **【Mountain-Moving True Method of Commanding Peaks】** !”

Lü Yang uttered the incantation, his voice like rolling thunder, heard by almost everyone present.

Yet in the next moment, all the fleeing lights suddenly sank!

It felt as though a great mountain had pressed down upon them!

The characteristic of the **【Mountain-Moving True Method of Commanding Peaks】** was that upon hearing the incantation, one would immediately feel as if bearing the weight of mountains and rivers, rendering their Dharma body immobile!

Among them, the most miserable was Fairy Yun He from the Cloud Climbing Sect.

For some reason, she felt that the spell's weight was especially heavy on her!

Clearly, her **【Heavenly Union Cloud and Water Dao Foundation】** was of the softest yin nature, best at using force to overcome force and resolving disasters.

Yet now, facing Lü Yang's spell, it was like soft silk encountering hardened steel, leaving her with no way to respond.

Thinking of this, she could not help but sweep her divine sense toward Lü Yang's direction.

And then, she saw Lü Yang slowly forming a hand seal.

In the next moment, Fairy Yun He's beautiful eyes froze at the instant of her rising terror.

Her red lips parted, wide enough to fit an egg.

The characteristic of the 【Mountain-Moving True Method of Commanding Peaks】 was that upon seeing the hand seal, one's heart would bear the weight of a great mountain, leaving their thoughts paralyzed!

Finally, Lü Yang pointed with his sword.

Fairy Yun He's body was instantly covered in a layer of earthy gray.

Mud gushed from her seven orifices, and in an instant, she was transformed into a lifelike clay figurine.

“Boom!”

The clay figurine fell, took root upon landing, and countless stones gathered around, turning into a small mountain connected to the earth vein in the blink of an eye.

Only a muffled groan from Fairy Yun He remained in the heavens and earth.

Upon seeing this scene, the other True Persons fled even faster, not daring to linger for fear that they would be the next to be sealed.

Lü Yang, on the other hand, reversed his grip on the 【Abyss Sword】 and lightly landed atop the small mountain formed from Fairy Yun He.

Half an hour later.

The grand chase finally came to an end.

The True Person of Yinshan was the first to return, dragging a disheveled, spiritless middle-aged man behind him.

He was the patriarch of the Zhao Xia Clan, Xia Weiming.

He had been the first to be ambushed and wounded by the True Person of Yinshan, marked with a seal, leaving him with no way to escape, and was captured alive.

In addition, another patriarch of the Immortal Clans, the Foundation Establishment True Person of the Yuan Chen Clan, Chen Anze, had also been caught.

“What about the others?”

“That's all. Three escaped,” the True Person of Yinshan replied with a smile.

“Especially that Duobao. I deliberately let him go and didn't let anyone chase after him.”

Lü Yang nodded.

“That one’s rather foolish. He should indeed be let go.”

Such fools on the enemy’s side were actually their own good allies.

They must not be killed lightly; otherwise, what if the enemy replaced him with someone smarter?

“And the other two?”

“One was the Five Elements True Person, who fled quickly.

The other was a sword cultivator, probably from the Upper Profound Sword Sect, with backing from the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion.

He had a life-saving item, making it difficult to pursue.”

At this point, the True Person of Yinshan chuckled.

“But regardless, this can be considered a great victory!”

“Shall we press the attack while we have the upper hand?”

“No rush.”

Lü Yang shook his head.

“This time, they came to attack us, and we were defending on our home turf.

If we pursue them, it will turn into us fighting on their territory.”

“Bring the captives over. I want to personally interrogate them!”

“Interrogate?”

The True Person of Yinshan was stunned when he heard this.

“There are two men and one woman among the captives.

The woman is understandable.

I know the Mending Heaven Peak has secret arts for harvesting essence.”

“But the men?”

“Don’t worry, I have my own methods.”

Lü Yang waved his hand, then brought Fairy Yun He and the two patriarchs of the Immortal Clans back to Gai Bamboo Mountain, where he prepared in a great hall.

He took out the All-Spirit Banner and summoned Chen Xin'an.

Immediately after, Lü Yang picked up Fairy Yun He and said, “I’ll trouble myself a bit and personally interrogate her.”

After speaking, he pointed at the two patriarchs of the Immortal Clans on the ground, formed a hand seal, and cast the 【Heavenly Mother Transformation Mysterious Light】

Then he said to Chen Xin'an:

“These two are yours.”

Chen Xin'an: “...”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,534 words]

One day later.

Lü Yang, feeling refreshed and energetic, walked out of the secret chamber.

He glanced at Chen Xin'an, whose face was pale as if he was about to vomit, and with a shake of the All-Spirits Banner, he put him away.

Outside the chamber, True Person Yinshan had already been waiting for quite some time.

"Sorry to keep Senior Brother waiting."

"Not at all."

True Person Yinshan gave Lü Yang a strange look and sincerely said, "Uncle-Master truly didn’t misjudge you back then, you are indeed a pillar of the sect."

You carry the style of a Patriarch!

"Overpraise, overpraise."

Lü Yang waved his hand humbly and quickly got to the point, "I've already investigated the details of 【Kingdom of Qing】 . There are both pros and cons."

"The good side is that 【Kingdom of Qing】 is but a tiny land, with a population of no more than a million. Therefore, the highest official position offers extremely limited cultivation support. Even with the nation's full resources, they can only sustain a single late Foundation Establishment Great True Person, and the cost is that all other officials lose their corresponding supernatural abilities."

"The bad side is that they have already learned about Uncle-Master Chong Guang's situation."

Hearing this, True Person Yinshan shook his head, "It wasn't exactly hidden when Senior Brother sought the golden path. Reversing the fruit position rules is a major event, and it was never going to stay secret for long."

"Fortunately, Senior Brother's reincarnated body has not been exposed."

"With Senior Brother's cultivation, there won't be any fetal confusion this time. He can awaken his divine memory upon reincarnation and hide in the shadows to cooperate with us inside and out."

"Speaking of which—"

At this point, Lü Yang suddenly lowered his voice, "How exactly does Uncle-Master seek the golden path and reverse 【Kingdom of Qing】 's fruit position rules?"

This was something True Person Chong Guang hadn't explained back then, and Lü Yang hadn't dared to ask more.

Only now did he carefully ask, after all, he had just risked his life killing enemies without holding back. His loyalty could be said to be as clear as the sun and moon.

Seeing this, True Person Yinshan chuckled, "To put it plainly, it's actually nothing complicated."

"It was originally meant to be told to Yuan Tu."

"You've seen 【Kingdom of Qing】 as well. Governed by the Dao Court, following the lineage of ten thousand generations, to reverse its rules is naturally to overthrow 【Kingdom of Qing】 's existing rule."

"... That's it?"

Lü Yang was stunned, "If that's the case, why would Uncle-Master need to reincarnate? Wouldn't it be better to just attack directly? If 【Kingdom of Qing】 is destroyed, wouldn't it still succeed?"

True Person Yinshan shook his head.

"Overthrowing by force is useless. Only by letting their system collapse and disintegrate on its own counts as a true reversal."

"You mean—"

Lü Yang seemed to grasp something, "Uncle-Master must act as a leader and let the people of Qing overthrow their own court for it to be considered a success?"

In other words, it was 【an uprising】 !

"You're right."

True Person Yinshan nodded, "To overturn the Dao Court's system, it must either be from the bottom up or from the top down. There is no third way."

"And what we need to do is apply as much external pressure as possible to intensify 【Kingdom of Qing】's internal contradictions, while pinning down those who could threaten Senior Brother on the battlefield, preventing them from leaving, so that Senior Brother's reincarnated body can stir up the people in secret."

"Therefore, this war is likely to continue for a long time."

"... I understand."

After that, Lü Yang cross-checked the information he had obtained about the Foundation Establishment forces within 【Kingdom of Qing】 with True Person Yinshan, and only then saw him off.

However, he didn't fully trust True Person Yinshan's words.

After all, all this information must have come from True Person Chong Guang.

But as a True Person of the Saint Sect, would Chong Guang truly reveal all his plans for seeking the golden path?

Would he really reincarnate without leaving any backup?

Lü Yang narrowed his eyes, gazing into the distance in the direction of 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

His instincts told him that there was definitely something wrong with Chong Guang's reincarnation!

【Kingdom of Qing】 , Zha Long Pass.

Zhong Xin, the current top scholar of the Kingdom of Qing, was in his study reviewing official documents.

As an official under the Dao Court system, they did not need to cultivate.

All supernatural abilities were granted by the Son of Heaven.

Absorbing the spiritual energy of heaven and earth? There was no need. Once you attained the official position, the spiritual energy would willingly enter your body, letting you refine it at will.

Practicing divine abilities?

Also unnecessary, because all divine abilities came with the official position. Practicing was just a waste of time. As long as you had the position, you would naturally master them.

"... Hmm?"

At that moment, Zhong Xin suddenly raised his head, then flicked his sleeve and walked out of the study.

He saw a stream of fiery light descending from the sky, quickly forming into shape.

The next second, earth generated from fire, metal from earth, water from metal, wood from water, and fire from wood... under the cycle of the five elements, a staggering figure fell out, clutching a tattered umbrella full of holes.

It was none other than the heavily injured, with his magical body on the verge of collapse—Five Elements True Person!

"Senior Hua!?"

Zhong Xin hurried forward to support Five Elements True Person, only to see him give a bitter smile, "I regret not heeding the words of Top Scholar Zhong... I have returned in utter defeat."

"Please, sit down first."

Zhong Xin did not blame him. Instead, he immediately helped Five Elements True Person sit, then quickly took out a pill and fed it to him, helping to stabilize his wounded magical body.

A moment later, two more streaks of light descended from the sky.

It was none other than Duo Bao Child and the pale-faced Xuan Jin Sword Master, both of whom had narrowly escaped death.

"Only you all returned?" Seeing this, Zhong Xin couldn't help falling silent.

After a long while, he finally spoke, "What exactly happened? Though I didn't agree with you going, I never expected such heavy losses. Could it be that a Great True Person of the Demon Sect shamelessly took action?"

"Not a Great True Person..."

Five Elements True Person's expression grew even grimmer, and without explaining further, he simply split off a strand of divine sense and handed it to Zhong Xin, imprinting all their previous experiences into it.

Zhong Xin took the divine sense and skimmed through it roughly.

A long time later, he suddenly opened his eyes wide, speaking in a low voice, "... What a fierce sword! What a ruthless person! Whose direct disciple of the Saint Sect is this?"

"Unknown."

Five Elements True Person sighed, "I bear the blame for causing the downfall of three fellow Daoists..."

"That's not true."

Zhong Xin shook his head, "Though the loss is great, didn't you bring back a mid-Foundation Establishment reinforcement? It's not entirely a loss."

"Moreover, after this battle, we've finally probed the Demon Sect's forces. Knowing about this person now is better than finding out later. In this way, not only are you not at fault, but you have actually done a great service! I will report this to the King on your behalf. Please do not belittle yourself!"

"Is that really appropriate?"

Although Five Elements True Person put on an embarrassed look, his expression clearly brightened, showing he did not disagree.

Soon after, Zhong Xin comforted everyone.

Only when everyone's injuries and mood had stabilized did he have them led away, then he turned around and walked back into the study, quietly closing his eyes.

"... Useless trash!"

Zhong Xin cursed coldly, then pulled out a golden imperial edict from his sleeve.

With a flash of light, he disappeared from where he stood.

When he reappeared, he had already arrived inside a magnificent palace.

Inside the spacious hall, layer upon layer of curtains hung high.

Each step was guarded by armored soldiers, exuding an aura of coldness and killing intent.

Zhong Xin lowered his head and quickly entered the hall.

Soon, a tall, heroic figure came into view.

The man wore royal robes and a ceremonial crown, standing with his back to Zhong Xin.

Suddenly, he sighed softly, "Beloved Minister Zhong, what happened at the front lines that made you so hurried?"

"Your servant pays respects to Your Majesty."

Without another word, Zhong Xin knelt on one knee and said in a deep voice, "This servant failed to defend the border, resulting in the loss of two Foundation Establishment True Persons. I await Your Majesty's punishment."

"... Is that so."

The atmosphere in the great hall instantly grew oppressive.

After a long while, a voice finally drifted down, "Beloved Minister Zhong, you were personally chosen by Us as the top scholar, your talent recognized by the entire court. I ask you, what do you think of Our performance on this throne over the years?"

"Your Majesty possesses unparalleled talent and extraordinary wisdom."

Zhong Xin replied without hesitation, "In the early years of Your Majesty's reign, You eradicated longstanding corruption, bringing renewal to the land. Even the Son of Heaven of Jiangdong praised Your Majesty greatly."

"If that is so..."

The young man in royal robes stepped down from the platform and stood before Zhong Xin, his voice cold as ice, "... Then why is Great Qing on the verge of destruction?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,432 words]

Inside the spacious grand hall, silence filled the air.

A gust of cold wind blew in from an unknown direction, chilling one to the bone, even forming a thin layer of frost on the floor of the hall.

"Your Majesty has overstated things."

Facing King Qing's inquiry, Zhong Xin remained calm and spoke solemnly, "It is still uncertain who will prevail. How could Your Majesty speak lightly of life and death?"

"... Hahaha."

The next moment, King Qing suddenly burst into laughter, "Beloved Minister Zhong, you are overthinking it. I was merely joking for the moment. Let's speak of the front lines instead. Which Foundation Establishment cultivators have died?"

Zhong Xin continued, "One was a rogue cultivator from Jiangbei.

Besides that, Fairy Yun He of the Panyun Sect, the ancestor of the Zhao Xia Clan, and the ancestor of the Yuan Chen Clan were all captured alive.

The ones who managed to escape returned with injuries, all looking as if they had been terrified by the Demon Sect.

Given time, I fear Zhalong Pass may no longer be defensible."

Zhong Xin gave a detailed explanation of the causes and consequences.

Upon hearing the full account, King Qing immediately showed a furious expression, "Incompetent fools, bringing shame upon the nation!"

It seems I must personally step forward!"

"Send the decree! I shall lead the army myself!"

"With my strength, gathering the power of the entire nation on the battlefield, assuming the position of Grand True Person, no demon can stand before me. They are nothing but heads waiting to be severed with a single sword!"

"Your Majesty must not act on impulse."

Seeing this, Zhong Xin quickly stepped forward and said, "Your Majesty is of invaluable worth, the very foundation of the nation, not like ordinary men.

How could you personally set foot in such a dangerous place? This must not be done!"

"Then let it be."

King Qing smoothly sat back down, chuckling to himself.

He was, after all, of imperial blood, different from those lowly peasants.

How could he possibly risk his life battling formidable enemies?

But if not him, then who could take the field?

Thinking of this, he once again grabbed Zhong Xin's hand, sighing deeply, "Beloved Minister Zhong, if I do not lead the army, who else can shoulder this burden for me?"

"I am willing!"

Zhong Xin did not hesitate in the slightest and solemnly said, "If Your Majesty would bestow upon me the Heavenly Sword and the imperial token, allowing me to assume the position of Grand True Person in your stead, I shall lead the expedition.

This way, even if the battle turns dire and misfortune occurs, it will be I who perishes, while Your Majesty remains safe and may appoint another worthy minister in my place."

"Would this not be too costly for you?"

King Qing spoke with apparent kindness, "With your merit and destiny, temporarily holding the position of Grand True Person will surely consume a great deal of fortune.

The backlash afterward may ruin the rest of your life."

"To share Your Majesty's burdens, I would gladly endure it as if it were sweet honey."

Hearing these words, King Qing nodded in satisfaction, "Good! Good! Among all the civil and military officials of the court, only you are a truly loyal, virtuous, and capable minister!"

"Your Majesty flatters me."

Zhong Xin shook his head and said, "I am but a forthright minister."

King Qing smiled and then shifted the topic, "Since you are a forthright minister, then tell me plainly, how should we deal with that Chong Guang of the Demon Sect?"

"The Jiangdong Dao Court is unreliable."

"That old fool at the Si Tian Platform even claims that my heavenly mandate has come to an end, that enemies press from without and traitors lurk within.

He suggests surrendering sooner rather than putting up futile resistance."

At this point, King Qing glanced at Zhong Xin again.

Though he spoke with disdain, he actually believed it somewhat, otherwise he wouldn't have tested Zhong Xin earlier with talk of personally leading the army.

"Your Majesty,"

Zhong Xin continued, "In my humble opinion, the most urgent task is to thoroughly investigate within the nation.

All infants less than one year old must be strictly screened."

"After all, according to the message from the Si Tian Platform, that Chong Guang is a reincarnated individual."

"At present, it is still early. He is but an infant.

Even if he possesses some supernatural abilities, he would be easier to deal with.

The longer we wait, the greater the danger!"

King Qing nodded, "Of course I know this.

I have already gathered many capable men and hidden talents among the people, determined to find his reincarnated self."

"Forgive my frankness, but this approach is unlikely to yield results."

Zhong Xin shook his head, "That Chong Guang True Person is said to be a Grand True Person of the Demon Sect, backed by a True Lord.

Finding him would be exceedingly difficult."

At this point, Zhong Xin's tone suddenly turned cold and murderous, "So instead of wasting time searching, it would be better to simply issue an order—drown all newborn infants!

No matter how powerful that True Person may be, even the cleverest housewife cannot cook without rice!"

"Drown all newborns..."

As the words fell, King Qing narrowed his eyes.

He was no fool and had considered this cruel strategy himself, yet he could not act on it.

Because it would make him universally hated.

Moreover, drowning newborns would undermine the foundation of the Dao Court's system.

Without newborns, the population would dwindle year after year—what rule would there be to speak of then?

However, if a minister proposed it, that would be another matter.

Thinking of this, King Qing could not help but smile, "Beloved Minister, this suggestion is excellent, but it must be carried out by someone loyal, reliable, and meticulous."

"Why not have you do it? What do you say?"

Without hesitation, Zhong Xin bowed and said, "I accept the command!"

"Very good."

King Qing nodded, "During this period, I shall feign illness and remain in the palace, ignoring all external affairs.

I leave this matter entirely in your hands, Beloved Minister Zhong.

I trust you will not disappoint me."

As his voice fell, King Qing sighed inwardly.

Such a useful talent, but he knew he could not keep him afterward.

Feigning illness was also to avoid being implicated in the drowning of infants.

Once Chong Guang was eliminated, he would "recover" and emerge to set things right.

At that time, he would still be the wise and heroic ruler.

As for Zhong Xin, he would become the great traitorous minister who had abused the trust placed in him, bringing chaos to governance and harming the people.

His value as a talent would have reached its end.

However, just then...

[Latest novel first released at 69shu.com!]

"Report!"

Suddenly, a report came from outside the palace.

A fully armored soldier rushed in, holding a memorial in his hands, his expression panicked, "Your Majesty... they have found it!"

"Found what?"

King Qing raised his eyebrows slightly, then swiftly snatched the memorial from the soldier's hands.

Upon reading it, he stood frozen in place, then looked at Zhong Xin in confusion.

Seeing this, Zhong Xin also showed a curious expression, "Your Majesty?"

"... Hahaha! Found it!"

The next moment, King Qing burst into laughter, his face filled with ecstasy, "The people I sent have returned with news—they have found that reincarnated Chong Guang True Person!"

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

On a gauze-draped canopy bed, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue lay reclining, twirling strands of hair around her fingers, casually gazing below.

There lay a map.

A great river divided east, west, south, and north.

Bright stars were scattered across the map, one of which was positioned right over 【Qing Kingdom】 .

However, up until now, this star remained extremely dim.

At this moment, a clear and melodious voice suddenly rang out, "If Chong Guang breaks through and joins forces with the three of us, there may be hope in the later stages."

"Actually, 【City Head Earth】 could work too."

True Lord Qingcheng Feixue smiled and looked at the map, "That young man called Yuan Tu, I quite like him.

He carries the demeanor of an ancestral master in his conduct."

"Better forget it."

" 【City Head Earth】 is in the Pure Land.

Just the three of us cannot bring it out.

Over there, they treat it as a treasure, waiting to establish a Buddhist Kingdom on Earth."

Hearing this, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue also snorted coldly, "Just that bunch of bald donkeys?"

"A Buddhist Kingdom on Earth, and they dare to covet the position of Dao Lord!"

Just then, the dim star on the map gradually began to emit a faint glow.

Though it was far less bright than the other stars, it finally began to shine.

"... It has finally begun!"

Seeing this, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue stopped speaking, her face showing anticipation.

Her red lips parted, and a voice directly reached Jiangbei.

It entered Lü Yang's ears as he was in seclusion on Gai Bamboo Mountain.

The message contained only four words:

"Immediate departure to the south."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,453 words]

"You are saying this child is the reincarnation of Chong Guang?"

In the Kingdom of Qing, inside the grand hall, King Qing stared darkly at a fair-skinned child who appeared to be seven or eight years old.

"Are you trying to fool me?"

"Reporting to Your Majesty."

The eunuch in charge of delivering the message hurriedly replied, "Although this child appears large, he was actually born just eight days ago, and he possesses extraordinary divine abilities far beyond ordinary mortals."

"This thing is eight days old!?"

King Qing's expression grew even more suspicious.

When he heard the eunuch mention that the child possessed divine abilities, he immediately glanced at Zhong Xin beside him, and Zhong Xin understood his intent.

In the next second, the top scholar unhesitatingly extended a finger, gathering official Qi at his fingertip to form a sharp arrow that shot directly at the child.

However, to everyone's surprise, when the sharp arrow landed on the child, it didn't even leave the slightest scratch on his skin!

"This is **【Everlasting Toon Tree】**!"

Zhong Xin's eyes narrowed slightly as he spoke, "Jia Wood severed at its roots and branches, turning into deadwood. When combined with the waters of rivers, ponds, and marshes, deadwood and dead water merge to form the **【Everlasting Toon Tree】**."

"This should be a talent divine ability from the **【Extinguished Lamp Flame】** lineage!"

"It is mainly for longevity and indestructibility, a supreme defensive and protective Dao art."

King Qing was somewhat pleasantly surprised upon hearing this.

"So, you are saying this child really is Chong Guang? But he has not yet broken through the mystery of the womb, possessing only a single protective talent divine ability?"

"Reporting to Your Majesty, this humble servant, with mortal eyes, cannot discern it clearly."

Zhong Xin revealed a troubled expression and said, "In this humble servant's view, this is just an ordinary infant, without any divine soul anomalies, merely possessing some inexplicable divine abilities."

King Qing shook his head and then pointed at the child.

"Regardless of whether it's true or not, kill him!"

As soon as the words fell, several eunuchs immediately stepped forward.

Although the 【Everlasting Toon Tree】 was formidable, it was, after all, just an infant with little to no magical power.

Thus, the eunuchs merely conjured two balls of spiritual fire with their magical power and threw them onto the child.

Before long, the child was burned into a pile of ashes.

King Qing then personally stepped forward to carefully examine the remains, confirming that the infant was indeed dead.

But before he could even breathe a sigh of relief—

"Report!"

Another armored guard rushed into the hall, kneeling and loudly declaring, "Your Majesty, spies from all regions have returned with reports—three more Chong Guang have been discovered!"

"..."

King Qing nearly laughed from anger.

Three Chong Guang?

Why don't you just say the entire Primordial Saint Sect has reincarnated into my little Qing Kingdom?

My Qing Kingdom must be truly blessed!

Moments later, three more infants were brought in.

Zhong Xin stepped forward to examine them one by one, then shook his head.

"Just like the one before, each carries only a single talent divine ability from the 【Extinguished Lamp Flame】 lineage."

"【Hidden Dragon Water】 , 【Fear of Felling】 , 【Sturdy Flame Furnace】 ..."

Zhong Xin spoke cautiously, then shook his head again.

"Your Majesty, this humble servant's limited knowledge may not suffice for accurate identification. Perhaps others should be summoned for verification."

There was no need for him to suggest it.

King Qing had already intended to do so.

He immediately nodded and summoned several senior officials from the Imperial Academy to examine the infants together.

However, the result was the same as Zhong Xin's conclusion.

The infants did not seem like reincarnations, yet the divine abilities they possessed did not appear to be fake either.

At that moment, yet another guard reported the appearance of another divine child.

"A fifth one?"

King Qing was stunned.

This child also bore the 【Everlasting Toon Tree】 !

But hadn't the infant with the 【Everlasting Toon Tree】 already been reduced to ashes?

"How could this be?"

King Qing could hardly believe his eyes.

Finally, an old official stepped forward and spoke in a deep voice, "Your Majesty, this servant believes there is more to this than meets the eye."

"Of course I know there is more to this! The problem is, what exactly is it!?"

King Qing lost his composure and cursed loudly.

After finally thinking they had found the reincarnation of Chong Guang, it turned out to be a farce.

Such a rollercoaster of emotions left him unable to control his temper.

"This servant believes these are all decoys."

"Although these infants possess talent divine abilities from the 【Extinguished Lamp Flame】 lineage, none of them carry their innate divine ability. This, I believe, is the key."

"They must be used as cover for the true reincarnation of Chong Guang!"

"Therefore, until the real Chong Guang is found, killing these infants is meaningless. Even if they are killed, the soul would simply reincarnate into another infant."

"Useless! All of you are useless!"

King Qing cursed furiously and waved his hand.

"Zhong Xin, I'm weary of this. From now on, you will handle this matter. Be decisive."

The implication was clear—kill them all!

Better to kill by mistake than to let one slip by!

Zhong Xin did not hesitate in the slightest and immediately bowed.

"This servant obeys the decree."

Just then, a third guard rushed into the hall, making King Qing irritated again.

"Another infant? From now on, all such matters—"

Before he could finish, the guard's panicked shout echoed throughout the grand hall.

"The Demon Sect is moving south!"

【Kingdom of Qing】 , outside Zhalong Pass.

"This place is called Zhalong Pass because it divides the Kingdom of Qing and Jiangbei. A single pass severs the flow of spiritual Qi into two parts."

"Because the spiritual Qi within the pass is completely bound by the Dao Court's rules, not even a speck belongs to anyone else. Those below the Foundation Establishment Realm cannot use any divine arts or spells inside. Our only way to enter the Kingdom of Qing is to break through Zhalong Pass and disrupt the Dao Court's spiritual Qi monopoly."

In front of the grand pass, True Person Yinshan, Han Xiang, and a valiant woman stood side by side.

Below them was a swarm of cultivators, like an army of ants.

These were all disciples summoned from the various sects of Jiangbei, ranging from mid to peak Qi Refining stages.

At this moment, they each rode their escape lights, flying toward Zhalong Pass.

Meanwhile, the soldiers stationed at Zhalong Pass stood in defense, clashing head-on with them.

The two forces battled fiercely, instantly staining the ground red with blood.

"Daoist Yinshan, what use are these Qi Refining disciples?"

Seeing this scene, Han Xiang couldn't help but ask, "The formation of Zhalong Pass cannot be broken by anyone below Foundation Establishment. Aren't these Qi Refining disciples just throwing their lives away?"

True Person Yinshan glanced at Han Xiang and replied calmly.

"Daoist friend, your thinking is still too narrow."

"Although they are only Qi Refining, they are not entirely useless. Long before the battle began, I had already distributed cultivation spiritual pills to all the Qi Refining disciples."

"I added a special medicinal lead to those pills. While retaining their cultivation effects, I infused them with a taint of blood corruption. If these Qi Refining disciples die at Zhalong Pass, their blood and Qi will merge into the spiritual veins, polluting the spiritual Qi and indirectly weakening the formation of Zhalong Pass."

Before he could finish speaking, Zhalong Pass suddenly trembled.

As the spiritual Qi was corrupted, the originally smooth-running formation faltered slightly, revealing numerous flaws in the eyes of Foundation Establishment Realms.

True Person Yinshan nodded when he saw this.

"You see? They are not useless after all."

Han Xiang remained silent.

In the next moment, True Person Yinshan turned to look at Han Xiang and the valiant woman beside her.

"Daoist Han Xiang, Daoist Yu Chan, this time we must give it our all."

The other two nodded in agreement.

However, before they moved, the valiant woman named "Yu Chan" glanced around but did not see Lü Yang's figure.

Her delicate brows furrowed slightly.

High above the sky, True Person Yinshan stood with his hands behind his back.

In his palm, he held a black mountain-shaped magical treasure.

With a surge of his magical power, he threw it into the sky, and in an instant, it transformed into a real mountain!

"Boom!"

The mountain crashed down, directly smashing into Zhalong Pass.

The earth shook and the mountains trembled.

Outside Zhalong Pass, the spiritual Qi surged violently, and the formation's glow flickered dimly.

With the spiritual Qi polluted and its power greatly reduced, facing such a violent attack from True Person Yinshan, the pass actually began to show signs of collapse.

However, at that moment—

"Do not panic, hold the line!"

Amidst a wave of spatial fluctuations, a tall and imposing figure appeared on the city wall of Zhalong Pass, immediately stabilizing the formation.

It was none other than Zhong Xin, who had just been urgently recalled through spatial transference!

"..."

In the next instant, the eyes of Zhong Xin and True Person Yinshan met, both radiating intense killing intent.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 214: The Sacred Sect Rules the World with Human Effort

[1,289 words]

At Zhalong Pass, True Person Yinshan had already unleashed his full power.

Although Lü Yang's performance had drawn too much attention, causing few to notice Yinshan's strength, this did not mean Yinshan was weak.

At least Lü Yang would never think so.

After all, before Lü Yang appeared, Yinshan had been the most trusted subordinate of True Person Chong Guang, and with Chong Guang's discerning eye, he would never favor a mediocre talent.

"Boom!"

Another loud rumble sounded as a black mountain peak smashed down.

This time, however, it shrank to the size of a basin, yet its weight remained unchanged.

As the seal fell, Zhong Xin was forced to summon his own 【Official Position】 to resist.

Yet, Yinshan's combat style was vast and overwhelming.

The black mountain seal continuously pounded down, displaying the art of size manipulation to its peak—sometimes like Mount Tai pressing from above, sometimes piercing a point to break the whole—making it hard to defend against.

On the other side, two more beams of brilliant light rose within Zhalong Pass.

When the light faded, the figures of the two were revealed—it was none other than Five Elements True Person and Duobao Child.

However, their faces were filled with caution at this moment.

".Did he come? Could he be ambushing us?"

For a moment, the two did not dare to aid Zhong Xin, hiding cautiously within the formation of Zhalong Pass, scanning every inch of the outer space.

They couldn't help it—they were truly terrified.

With the previous example of Old Dragon Fisher before them, how could they still trust their divine senses?

They feared Lü Yang might suddenly jump out from the void and slaughter them.

Seeing this, True Person Yinshan shook his head and chuckled.

Zhong Xin, however, wore a helpless expression and hurriedly transmitted his voice: "Seniors, hurry and come assist me!"

Since Zhong Xin had spoken, Five Elements True Person and Duobao Child had no choice but to grit their teeth, take out all their protective magical treasures, and charge out.

Yet, two beams of brilliant light flew in from nowhere, intercepting them mid-air.

It was none other than Han Xiang and the valiant woman Yu Chan, who had come to fight alongside Yinshan.

"Looks like he really didn't come!"

Though these two were only at the mid-Foundation Establishment stage, formidable opponents to Five Elements True Person and Duobao Child, they suddenly showed a relaxed expression.

"That fiend doesn't seem to be here!"

To them, Lü Yang's sword strike that killed Old Dragon Fisher had left an overwhelming impact.

Even during meditation, they could not help but recall that day's scene.

Now that Lü Yang was absent, they immediately regained their confidence.

Very soon, six mid-Foundation Establishment True Persons engaged in combat above Zhalong Pass, yet remained locked in a stalemate, unable to determine a victor.

Meanwhile, Foundation Establishment early-stage True Persons from both sides began to show themselves as well.

Just like that, more than half an hour passed.

When Five Elements True Person and Duobao Child began struggling to hold on, a sword light suddenly flared in the distance.

"Zheng zheng!"

The sound of sword cries shook the heavens.

Where the sword light passed, sword intent surged, chilling to the bone.

The sword's edge aimed unerringly at True Person Yinshan at the top!

"A fellow Daoist from Upper Profound Sword Sect has arrived!"

Seeing this, Five Elements True Person was overjoyed: "A mid-Foundation Establishment sword cultivator, carrying sword intent, this must be the Blackiron Sword Master. This person is enough to break the stalemate!"

With six already engaged in pairs, their side now gained one more, giving them the upper hand.

Zhong Xin also showed a smile upon seeing this.

On the other side, True Person Yinshan frowned slightly but did not hesitate.

With a wave of his hand, before the sword light could arrive, he ordered a retreat from Zhalong Pass.

This sudden withdrawal immediately confused many.

"Daoist Yinshan..."

Outside Zhalong Pass, Han Xiang was the first to approach, speaking softly: "We have suffered heavy casualties this time. Why did you choose to retreat?"

"Daoist friend, though your Blood Filth Technique is indeed exquisite, it can only be used temporarily. We paid such a heavy price to weaken the formation of Zhalong Pass. However, if we give them time to catch their breath and repair the formation, all these sacrifices will be meaningless."

At these words, True Person Yinshan froze.

"Today was merely a small test, to probe the enemy's strength, not a full-scale battle. No Foundation Establishment True Person has died. How can this be considered heavy casualties?"

Saying this, a trace of coldness appeared in Yinshan's eyes.

"Or... is it that some True Persons are afraid to continue fighting for the Sacred Sect? Don't forget, the True Lord is watching over us from above!"

Cowards on the battlefield, do they wish to taste the Sacred Sect's iron fist?

"This humble woman was referring to the Qi Refining disciples."

Han Xiang, startled, quickly explained: "Although the True Persons are unharmed, many Qi Refining disciples have died. That's why I came to inquire."

"What? Qi Refining disciples count as people too?"

"..."

At these words, Han Xiang broke out in cold sweat.

Yet she saw Yinshan looking at her with genuine confusion, filling her heart with both horror and helplessness.

'Damn it. They say the Sacred Sect treats people as resources, ignoring what the Qi Refining disciples think, often using them for artifact refining, pill refining, and cultivation practices. I thought it was exaggerated, but it seems it was understated! No wonder they're called the Northern Demon Sect!'

Thinking of this, she quickly bowed and said:

".This humble woman misspoke."

At this moment, the valiant woman Yu Chan, who had been silent, stepped forward and asked in a deep voice: "Where is Yuan Tu? Where has he gone?"

Hearing this, Yinshan glanced at Yu Chan and said indifferently: "Daoist Yu Chan, this matter concerns the Sacred Sect's grand strategy and cannot afford any mishaps. The True Lord is overlooking the entire battlefield. What we do, the heavens see. Stop bringing up those old grudges between your Zuoyu lineage and Dao Court."

Yu Chan was a True Person of Zuoyu lineage within the Sacred Sect.

Before this battle, she had been assigned by the Sacred Sect to monitor the Kingdom of Qing, for as a descendant of Zuoyu, she bore a blood feud with Dao Court.

However, things were different now.

With the matter concerning True Person Chong Guang's ascension to gold status, there was no way Yinshan would allow a mere declining Zuoyu descendant to stir up trouble.

"Naturally, I understand."

Yu Chan remained calm and continued: "But just now, if Yuan Tu had acted, we would have had at least a seventy percent chance of breaking through Zhalong Pass."

"Zhalong Pass is not important."

Yinshan shook his head: "The Sacred Sect has always ruled the world through human effort. Putting people first is the Sacred Sect's principle. Zhalong Pass is just a dead place."

"What truly matters are the people guarding the pass."

"You just said it yourself. If Yuan Tu were here, we'd have a seventy percent chance of breaking through. In other words, these people alone cannot hold the pass."

"The one truly capable of defending the pass has yet to arrive."

Hearing this, Yu Chan immediately showed a surprised expression: "Daoist friend, are you referring to... Upper Profound Sword Sect?"

Among the five forces within the Kingdom of Qing, the Upper Profound Sword Sect stood as the leader, having received support from Jiangnan, obtaining genuine sword cultivation inheritance.

The Sect Master of the Upper Profound Sword Sect, the current Upper Profound True Person, was already at mid-Foundation Establishment perfection.

It was said that with the support of the Sword Pavilion, he had recently entered seclusion, preparing to break through to the late stage.

Once he succeeded, with a great True Person personally guarding the pass, Zhalong Pass would immediately become impregnable.

"Exactly. Our task is merely to apply pressure and create a diversion."

Yinshan nodded, finally revealing a faint smile: "Yuan Tu has gone to deal with the one truly capable of holding Zhalong Pass."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 215: Here to Annihilate the Sect

[1,832 words]

With True Person Yinshan taking the initiative to retreat, the tense atmosphere within Zhalong Pass eased considerably.

As for the reinforcement, the Black Iron Sword Master, he was treated with great courtesy.

The so-called Black Iron Sword Master did not have a particularly handsome appearance, looking rather ordinary.

At this moment, after restraining his sword intent, he did not even carry much of a sword cultivator's sharpness.

At first glance, he seemed like nothing more than an old farmer.

Only the black iron longsword hanging at his waist faintly emitted a sharp aura that made even Foundation Establishment True Persons uneasy.

"Black Iron Daoist Friend!"

True Person Five Elements was the first to step forward, speaking excitedly, "Fortunately, Daoist Friend arrived in time, otherwise Zhalong Pass might have fallen to the Demon Sect today."

After speaking, he glanced again at the longsword hanging at Black Iron Sword Master's waist.

"Black Gold, Black Silver, Black Iron—the simpler the material, the sharper the sword intent becomes. The Black Iron Sword truly lives up to being the foremost among the Three Black Swords of the Upper Profound Sword Sect!"

"Overpraise."

Black Iron Sword Master waved his hand upon hearing this, though from his expression, it was obvious he was quite pleased.

After all, everyone enjoyed hearing good words, especially since he indeed believed he had made a significant contribution.

At the same time, Zhong Xin also stepped forward with a smile and said, "When I learned of the Demon Sect's march south, I immediately sent a message to the Upper

Profound Sword Sect seeking aid. Originally, I thought it would take much longer, but thanks to Black Iron Sword Master's profound cultivation and extraordinary sword escape speed, we were able to turn the tide at the last moment."

"Please, come in quickly. I have already prepared a banquet to welcome and honor all the Daoist Friends."

Seeing this, Black Iron Sword Master did not stand on ceremony.

Following Zhong Xin, the group of Foundation Establishment True Persons entered the hall, and the atmosphere immediately became lively.

"That person we encountered outside the city earlier, was that Yuan Tu?"

Black Iron Sword Master's gaze sharpened as he asked in a deep voice, "After Junior Brother Black Gold returned, he mentioned this person to me. I saw his sword heart waver, clearly harmed by that person."

"Unfortunately, that person retreated on his own, so I didn't get a chance to fight him."

"Otherwise, I would have wielded the 【Black Iron Sword】 and slain him before the formation, helping Junior Brother Black Gold to restore his shaken sword heart."

Saying this, Black Iron Sword Master sighed again, looking somewhat regretful.

Then he noticed that the previously lively banquet had, at some point, fallen silent.

Duobao Boy and the others were all staring at him.

What's wrong?

"Daoist Friend, you might not know."

True Person Five Elements sighed and said, "The person outside just now wasn't that fiend, but merely someone who accompanied him."

"Speaking of that fiend, I suspected he was a direct descendant of a True Lord from some family seeking merit. After his defeat, I spent considerable effort investigating him."

As he spoke, True Person Five Elements took out a jade slip.

"But the more I investigated, the more I began to suspect he's a reincarnation of a True Lord!"

"Daoist Friend, do you know how old that fiend is to this day?"

Black Iron Sword Master was stunned upon hearing this and cautiously replied, “I heard from Black Gold Sword Master that he is at the peak of the Foundation Establishment mid-stage. Could it be that this person has just entered his second lifetime?”

He thought his guess was already quite bold.

After all, for ordinary cultivators, building a foundation within a hundred years, refining their life-bound divine abilities, and seeking Heavenly Gangs and Earth Fiends would already consume their entire first lifetime.

To reach the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment in the first lifetime was already considered a heavenly prodigy.

Not to mention reaching the peak of the mid-stage with two divine abilities— such an achievement usually required at least one reincarnation.

For instance, the Sect Master of their Upper Profound Sword Sect was already in the late years of his third lifetime.

However, True Person Five Elements shook his head upon hearing this.

“A second lifetime? From what I know, that fiend has only cultivated for less than a hundred years!”

“Not to mention reincarnation, he hasn’t even lived through half of his first lifetime!”

These words left Black Iron Sword Master speechless.

Mid-stage Foundation Establishment in less than a hundred years? And at the peak?

What kind of joke was this!

After a long while, he let out a deep breath and forced a smile, saying, “Cultivating quickly isn’t necessarily a good thing. Advancing too fast makes one’s foundation unstable, and their divine abilities likely aren’t that high.”

As he spoke, Black Iron Sword Master fell silent halfway.

After all, he had heard from Black Gold Sword Master that the other party had, right under everyone’s watchful eyes, forcibly slain Elder Dragon Fisher, a mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator.

No matter how one looked at it, that counted as having high divine abilities.

“So what if his divine abilities are high?”

Black Iron Sword Master gripped the Black Iron Sword at his waist tightly.

“As sword cultivators, we have always traveled the world with our swords. If he stood before me, I would still strike him down with a single slash!”

At this point, Black Iron Sword Master’s eyes revealed a hint of pride.

“This Black Iron Sword was bestowed upon me by the Jiangnan Sword Pavilion. Not only is it a superior spirit treasure, but it also contains a mysterious ability called 【Barrier Breaker】. It can cut through all obstacles. No matter what divine abilities he has, I can still shatter them with a single strike!”

“Pfft!”

At this moment, Duobao Boy suddenly let out a stifled laugh.

Black Iron Sword Master immediately glared at him with cold eyes and asked sternly, “What are you laughing at?”

“Daoist Friend, please calm yourself.”

True Person Five Elements quickly stepped forward to hold him back, lowering his voice, “The Black Iron Sword is indeed sharp, but that fiend has even more formidable spirit treasures!”

“I saw it with my own eyes. He had at least three superior spirit treasures on him.”

“Among them were two magic swords, one of which contained three mysterious abilities, and the other one. In addition, he had a defensive spirit treasure. There might be other methods he didn’t even use.”

The more Black Iron Sword Master listened, the more speechless he became.

A magic sword with three mysterious abilities? At least three superior spirit treasures?

At this thought, he looked again at the Black Iron Sword he had cherished for many years, which had only one mysterious ability.

A wave of frustration suddenly surged in his heart.

“Damn second-generation immortals!”

Black Iron Sword Master gnashed his teeth and said, “For us sword cultivators, swords are merely external tools. The key lies in one’s comprehension of sword intent! That is something these second-generation immortals will never understand!”

“Daoist Friend, you are mistaken again.”

True Person Five Elements sighed, “According to my investigation, this person has no background at all. Every step he took to reach where he is today was solely due to his talent and hard work.”

Black Iron Sword Master: “. ”

There was no way to respond to that.

At this moment, Zhong Xin, seated at the head of the hall, finally spoke up.

“Even so, he is still not at the late stage of Foundation Establishment. We still have ways to deal with him.”

“Indeed!”

Black Iron Sword Master finally regained his spirits at these words.

“Our Sect Master, with the help of the Sword Pavilion, has recently found the third Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend. He is currently in seclusion, preparing to break through to the late stage of Foundation Establishment. When that happens, no matter how much of a genius that fiend is, he will not be able to withstand the Sect Master’s sword!”

Upon hearing this, everyone’s spirits lifted.

Only Zhong Xin remained cautious, lowering his voice, “Daoist Friend Black Iron, since you came to reinforce us, doesn’t that leave the Upper Profound Sword Sect undefended? Is their defense secure?”

“Rest assured!”

Black Iron Sword Master replied with great confidence, “Black Gold and Black Silver, two Foundation Establishment early-stage True Persons, are still stationed in the mountain. Small-time troublemakers are not worth mentioning.”

“What danger could there possibly be?”

“Wait.”

True Person Five Elements suddenly frowned at these words.

“That fiend didn’t show up here. Could he have secretly gone to your sect’s mountain gate?”

“After all, the enemy should also be aware of the threat your sect poses.”

Upon hearing this, Black Iron Sword Master’s expression immediately changed.

However, another voice quickly interrupted.

“Impossible! Absolutely impossible!”

Everyone turned toward the source of the voice.

It was none other than Duobao Boy.

“Everyone, don’t forget—Zhalong Pass is still here!”

Duobao Boy spoke confidently, “With the formation at Zhalong Pass blocking spiritual energy, no one can traverse the boundary by breaking through space.”

“And traveling by light flight wouldn’t escape our detection either.”

“Even if, taking the worst-case scenario, the formation was damaged during the recent attack, allowing that fiend to slip through— unless he completely destroys the Upper Profound Sword Sect, leaving no one to report back, wouldn’t he then become a trapped beast once we go to support them?”

“Think about it, everyone. Could he do that? Would he dare to do that?”

“After all, the Sect Master of the Upper Profound Sword Sect is also at the peak of the Foundation Establishment mid-stage, with the same cultivation level as that fiend. Would he be unable to send out even a single message if attacked?”

“This...”

Duobao Boy’s words were reasonable and convincing.

Even True Person Five Elements, who had raised the concern, began to feel that he had been worrying unnecessarily.

【Kingdom of Qing】 , Black Sword Mountain.

As the name suggested, this was the location of the Upper Profound Sword Sect’s mountain gate.

Because the mountain’s shape resembled a sharp sword piercing the clouds, it was named Black Sword Mountain.

Back when the founding ancestor of the Upper Profound Sword Sect established the sect here, it was precisely because of the exceptional feng shui and abundant spiritual energy.

He had hoped that future generations would build upon this foundation and nurture a spiritual vein in the mountain.

With the support of such a vein, the sect's legacy would be secure and long-lasting.

Just like the Witch Ghost Path in the past.

A thousand years ago, the Witch Ghost Path had controlled an eight-hundred-mile bone mountain spiritual vein.

Even True Lords were wary of making a move against them, which showed the importance of a spiritual vein to any major power.

“Fortunately, this place doesn't seem to have nurtured a spiritual vein yet.”

At the foot of Black Sword Mountain, a handsome young man dressed in white, wearing a black cloak with wide sleeves fluttering in the wind, leisurely observed the scenery of the mountain.

“Halt!”

When the young man approached the mountain gate, two disciples of the Upper Profound Sword Sect flew out to block his path, their expressions cold as they questioned him.

“Who are you? What business do you have here?”

“I am Lü Yang. Please relay the message.”

Lü Yang cupped his fists politely and smiled, “I have come here today to annihilate your sect and wipe out your entire clan.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,982 words]

Massacre the sect and exterminate the clan!

Such a casual phrase, spoken from the mouth of the young man in front of them, who looked like nothing more than a student on a spring outing, carried with it an overwhelming sense of unreality.

The two disciples of the Sword Sect even thought they had misheard.

However, they had no chance to ask again.

"Swish!"

Sword light flashed from its sheath, circling lightly around their necks, and in the next moment, two heads rolled to the ground as the scent of blood instantly alarmed the Upper Profound Sword Sect.

"Who goes there!?"

"Who dares trespass upon my Sword Sect!?"

Sword lights soared from various points on Profound Sword Mountain, voices filled with shock and anger, yet the next second, their voices were cut off in their throats.

At the summit of Profound Sword Mountain, the two Foundation Establishment True Persons, the Profound Gold Sword Master and the Profound Silver Sword Master, were abruptly startled awake.

They both felt through their spiritual senses that a great disaster had befallen them.

Especially the Profound Gold Sword Master, whose face turned pale with panic as he quickly stepped out of his meditation chamber and looked toward the source of the commotion.

The next moment, both of them showed expressions of utter disbelief:

"What is... that?"

Profound Sword Mountain was situated among numerous peaks, its surroundings usually covered with flowers, grass, and trees.

Yet at this moment, all they saw was a dark, overwhelming white tide.

Boom!

That surging white tide churned furiously as countless figures emerged from it, wave after wave, shoulder to shoulder, holding sharp weapons, numbering in the tens of thousands.

At the forefront stood a man and a woman.

The woman possessed unparalleled beauty and a cold expression, with a massive hall filled with sinister energy towering behind her.

The man wore a bitter expression, standing atop a diagram of the Yin-Yang Great Dao.

Both of them were clearly Foundation Establishment True Persons!

However, at this moment, these two Foundation Establishment True Persons stood respectfully with their hands folded at their sides, flanking a majestic Taoist in a black cloak, holding a magical sword upside down.

For a moment, the Profound Silver Sword Master was horrified.

With his Foundation Establishment perception, he could naturally tell that the dark mass below was not real people, but some kind of puppet-like beings.

Yet undeniably, even if they were puppets, they still represented a terrifying force.

Although the opponent was just one person in essence, he was enough to rival the entire Upper Profound Sword Sect!

Thinking this, the Profound Silver Sword Master was about to step forward and question him.

However, before he could move, the Profound Gold Sword Master beside him grabbed his arm tightly.

"Profound Gold...!?"

The Profound Silver Sword Master turned his head, instantly stunned, for the always proud and confident Profound Gold Sword Master now wore a face as pale as paper, filled with panic.

"It's him... it's really him!"

"He's that demonic fiend!"

Upon hearing this, the Profound Silver Sword Master's face also changed.

The Profound Gold Sword Master had fled from Jiangbei before, and the one he described the most was precisely this so-called demonic fiend.

"Activate the Sword Formation!"

The next second, the Profound Silver Sword Master shouted loudly, reacting with impressive speed.

On Profound Sword Mountain, ten thousand swords rang out in unison, and the brilliance of the formation instantly illuminated the sky.

Yet Lü Yang remained completely calm upon seeing this.

He even smiled and said, "Do the two of you really think I'm the kind of fool who, overestimating his strength, would come swaggering in through the front door?"

"What...?"

Upon hearing this, the Profound Silver Sword Master was momentarily stunned.

Before he could react, countless screams suddenly erupted from within Profound Sword Mountain, which was now covered by the formation!

Looking around, he saw that the defensive Sword Formation, originally meant to fend off outsiders, had now turned against all the disciples of the Upper Profound Sword Sect!

Countless sword lights rained down in an instant.

Except for the disciples who had reached the peak of Qi Refining, the rest, completely unprepared, were instantly pierced through by the sword lights!

In the blink of an eye, the entire Profound Sword Mountain was dyed red with blood.

"This is impossible!"

The Profound Silver Sword Master's eyes nearly popped out of their sockets.

The Profound Gold Sword Master, on the other hand, stood frozen in shock, muttering, "How could this happen? Why would the Mountain-Guarding Sword Formation betray us...?"

"There's nothing impossible about it."

Lü Yang shook his head and said, "The fact that the Upper Profound Sword Sect has a Mountain-Guarding Sword Formation is no secret."

"Since I knew about it, how could I have come here without any preparation?"

He had always acted only when he was certain of success, playing the safest game.

Without absolute confidence, how could he risk his own life?

Just yesterday, he had used the 【Star Concealing Radiance】 to hide his presence and, leveraging his rank-six formation master skills, had secretly modified the Sword Formation of the Upper Profound Sword Sect.

"Since I came here, it means this place is perfectly safe."

Lü Yang smiled calmly and added, "And since I said I'd massacre the sect and exterminate the clan, of course, I had already completed the job."

"Coming up the mountain today was just to wrap things up."

"After all, your sect does have one troublesome person."

Before Lü Yang finished speaking—

"Clang! Clang!"

A clear sword cry echoed from the belly of Profound Sword Mountain.

It started as faint as a mosquito's hum but soon resounded throughout the entire mountain.

Immediately after, a tall middle-aged man in a Taoist robe appeared above Profound Sword Mountain.

At a glance, his sword-like eyebrows were set deep into his brow, his expression firm.

With a wave of his hand, he released thousands of sword lights to protect all the disciples.

Only then did he turn to look at Lü Yang at the foot of the mountain.

Their gazes met at that moment.

In the next second, sword light flared!

"Swish——!"

Without a word, a sword light shot directly along the line of their sight toward Lü Yang.

Almost simultaneously, divine brilliance emerged on Lü Yang's body.

However, the sword light that the middle-aged man had released suddenly missed its mark, veering tens of thousands of meters off course.

Instead of striking Lü Yang, it landed hundreds of meters to Lü Yang's left in the forest, cutting down numerous trees but leaving Lü Yang, standing with his hands behind his back, completely unharmed.

".Hmm?"

Seeing this, the Upper Profound True Person narrowed his eyes and looked at Lü Yang with a hint of surprise.

"You actually managed to evade my sword intent lock?"

His sword intent directly severed karma.

Ordinary means could not evade it.

Even those of the same cultivation realm, in theory, could only choose to take it head-on.

Yet Lü Yang had managed to avoid it, proving that his divine ability was extraordinary.

"Sword intent... how impressive."

Lü Yang sighed and said, "I heard that you obtained the inheritance of the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion."

"You must have one or two of their secret sword techniques on you, right?"

"What, you want them?"

The Upper Profound True Person remained calm, his eyes seemingly capable of dissecting Lü Yang.

"Your divine ability is powerful, but there is a trace of discordance within you."

"If I'm not mistaken, this divine ability comes from an external source."

"Your cultivation should not have reached mid-stage perfection yet, but rather, like the court's 【official positions】, it is merely a temporary boost with an unstable foundation."

"In the end, you're nothing more than a paper tiger."

As he spoke, the Upper Profound True Person's sword intent began to intensify.

The familiar needle-like pain made Lü Yang narrow his eyes.

"I've seen another impressive sword cultivator, and you're about the same as him."

Lü Yang was naturally referring to Ye Xingfeng.

To this day, Ye Xingfeng was the only one Lü Yang had ever seen who could, at the mid Foundation Establishment stage, defeat someone at the mid Foundation Establishment perfection stage—a feat known as surpassing levels.

Though not a leap across major realms, it still reflected the difference between one innate divine ability and two, showcasing Ye Xingfeng's incredible strength.

Compared to that, while the Upper Profound True Person fell short in terms of spirit treasure, Dao foundation, and divine abilities, he had already reached mid-stage perfection.

With a higher cultivation realm, he could compensate for all shortcomings.

'To be fair, with my current strength, if I were to fight him, I'd at best have a fifty-fifty chance.'

'Moreover, I wouldn't be able to stop him from escaping or calling for reinforcements.'

Fortunately, Lü Yang had come prepared.

With this thought, Lü Yang immediately formed a hand seal.

Almost simultaneously, the Upper Profound True Person merged with his sword light and slashed toward Lü Yang's head from a distance.

"Boom!"

A loud explosion rang out.

The **【Hundredfold Peril-Subduing Profound Cloak】** activated once again, leaving Lü Yang unharmed.

His hand-sealing motion didn't pause as a divine brilliance gathered at his fingertips.

What began as a mere spark quickly spread like wildfire, merging with the great formation of Profound Sword Mountain, which Lü Yang already controlled.

In an instant, the entire sacred mountain was sealed off, trapping the Upper Profound True Person, the Profound Gold and Profound Silver Sword Masters, and all the Sword Sect disciples within the formation.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

During this time, the Upper Profound True Person did not stop attacking.

He unleashed three more sword strikes, all of which Lü Yang withstood using the mysterious power of the 【Hundredfold Peril-Subduing Profound Cloak】 .

"So that's it... It's not about power, but about the number of times it can be used."

The Upper Profound True Person had cultivated for hundreds of years and had rich combat experience.

Though he had only struck three times, he had already grasped the properties of this spirit treasure and immediately changed his tactics.

The next second, he unleashed over ten thousand sword lights!

Each sword light was less powerful than before, but by striking all at once, he could still break through the 【Hundredfold Peril-Subduing Profound Cloak】 and injure Lü Yang's true body!

However, at that moment, Lü Yang made his move.

"True Person Yinshan, attack the Execution Dragon Pass."

"Use the foul blood energy to temporarily weaken its formation power, allowing me to shift the void slightly on this side..."

Before his words finished, divine abilities burst forth!

【Fixing Proximity and Distance】 ! 【Great Art of Commanding Mountains to Move】 !

"I invite you all to take a trip to Jiangbei!"

Lü Yang let out a loud laugh as the radiance blooming from his fingertips filled the vision of everyone present, swallowing them all.

When the light dissipated, the Upper Profound True Person stood frozen in place.

The surroundings had changed.

Profound Sword Mountain was still there.

However, it was no longer surrounded by dense forests but by a flat plain.

On that plain, one terrifying aura after another surged into the sky.

At the forefront stood a man in black robes with a gloomy expression.

It was none other than True Person Yinshan!

Besides him, Han Xiang and Yu Chan followed closely, along with numerous other Foundation Establishment True Persons summoned by the Sacred Sect for this battle, numbering more than ten!

Yet all these True Persons wore shocked expressions as they stared incredulously at Lü Yang, standing with his hands behind his back.

Especially Han Xiang and Yu Chan.

Only now did they understand why Lü Yang hadn't appeared at Execution Dragon Pass just now.

They had thought he had merely gone to launch a sneak attack on the Upper Profound Sword Sect.

Who could have imagined that he had brought the entire Profound Sword Mountain here!

"What are you all still standing there for?"

In the next second, Lü Yang's eerie voice echoed.

"We, the heretical path, are we still going to talk about righteousness with these sword cultivators of the orthodox path? Charge with me!"

Take turns on him!

"Wait, there's been a misunderstanding—"

Before the Upper Profound True Person could finish his sentence, more than ten Foundation Establishment True Persons simultaneously unleashed their spirit treasures and divine abilities.

Countless dazzling attacks swallowed him whole!

Compared to honorable one-on-one combat, this was the true style of the Sacred Sect.

So what if you're at mid Foundation Establishment perfection?

If bullying the weak doesn't work, then bully you with numbers!

As long as the difference isn't insurmountable, sheer numbers can bury you to death!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 217: "Junior Brother, You Are Still Too Kind"

[1,520 words]

Shangxuan True Person moved very quickly.

Although he was already a mid-stage Foundation Establishment sword cultivator at perfection, possessing two innate divine abilities and a superior-grade spiritual sword, he was still no match for a crowd.

No matter how strong he was, he was not a Grand True Person.

Even if he had perfected the mid-stage Foundation Establishment, he was still at the mid-stage.

What's more, he was not a direct disciple of the True Lords of the Four Great Powers.

Therefore, when facing the siege of more than a dozen Foundation Establishment True Persons, he could only let out a few wretched howls like a defeated dog:

"Come fight me one-on-one if you have the guts!"

"Beasts... beasts, all of you!"

Amidst the miserable screams, Shangxuan True Person was struck from behind by Yinshan True Person's palm imprint, pierced through from the front by Yu Chan, and had his divine sense shattered by Han Xiang.

His entire body was battered and bruised by the magic treasures and divine abilities of other early-stage Foundation Establishment True Persons from Jiangbei.

Finally, a divine ability crashed down with a deafening roar.

【Embracing Mountain】 !

Without any power to resist, Shangxuan True Person fell to the ground, the radiance of his divine abilities dissipating in an instant, his eyes tightly shut, appearing completely unconscious.

As for the two early-stage Foundation Establishment sword cultivators, the Xuanjin Sword Master and the Xuanyin Sword Master, there was even less to say.

Lü Yang and the others didn't even need to lift a finger.

The Jiangbei cultivators, having witnessed the methods of the "Primordial Saint Sect", swarmed forward without hesitation.

Without any suspense, they captured the two on the spot.

"Well done."

Lü Yang's expression was calm as he sealed Shangxuan True Person and the two sword masters, Xuanjin and Xuanyin, into 【Embracing Mountain】 one by one.

"This time, you have all worked hard."

After speaking, he took out a stack of jade slips.

He infused a wisp of divine sense into each jade slip and then distributed them to the cultivators of Jiangbei present.

"You have all earned this. Take them."

"This is..."

A Foundation Establishment True Person from a small sect received a jade slip, swept his divine sense over it, and immediately looked excited.

"The Dao Method of 【Ten Thousand Treasures River】 from Fenbao Cliff?"

"I'm giving it to you. Just keep it."

Lü Yang's tone was indifferent.

"There are also the divine abilities and cultivation methods of Shangxuan Sword Sect. Once I extract them, everyone who participated this time will get a share."

"Since you all took the risk to act, I won't let you suffer a loss."

As his words fell, Lü Yang waved his hand and directly threw the superior-grade spiritual swords of Shangxuan True Person, Xuanjin Sword Master, and Xuanyin Sword Master to the three Foundation Establishment True Persons who had contributed the most this time.

This made the eyes of the others turn red with envy.

All their previous caution was instantly thrown out of their minds.

Divine abilities! Cultivation methods! Spiritual treasures!

The sects these people came from were already small, and some were even rogue cultivators.

Being able to obtain these things was already like striking it rich for them.

What more needed to be said?

If before, the Jiangbei cultivators still held back a little, now they were fully fired up with enthusiasm and fighting spirit.

Without this, how could they show their loyalty?

The grace of the Saint Sect was truly endless!

"As for them..."

At this point, Lü Yang looked at the three captives again and shook his head.

"Their cultivation to this point was not easy either."

"Our Primordial Saint Sect has always been lenient with prisoners."

"Here's the plan. After I finish the interrogation, their Dao Foundations will be fed to my 【Abi Sword】 , their corpses will be refined into demon corpses, and their souls will be sent to the Secret Realm of Refinement to reincarnate."

Upon hearing this, Yinshan True Person frowned, then sighed.

"Junior Brother, you are still too kind."

Lü Yang also showed a helpless expression.

"Ah, I just can't change this nature."

The two of them spoke so matter-of-factly.

But nearby, Han Xiang felt colder the more she listened, and even Yu Chan's eyelids twitched slightly.

Was this kindness?

Did the Primordial Saint Sect have a misunderstanding about the definition of kindness?

What they didn't know was that in Lü Yang and Yinshan True Person's view, letting their souls reincarnate and start over was already considered mercy.

If this wasn't kindness, what was?

Moreover, after reincarnation, they might even return to the Foundation Establishment Realm.

By then, they could harvest them again.

Next, Lü Yang dragged the three captives into a secret chamber, took out the Ten Thousand Spirits Banner, summoned Chen Xin'an, and performed the Heavenly Mother's Life-Transforming Profound Light.

A day later.

Lü Yang put away the pale-faced Chen Xin'an and casually ended the miserable lives of the already unrecognizable three captives with a single sword stroke.

Then, he began to count his spoils.

First was the 【Abi Sword】 .

A mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator at perfection and two early-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators—such a vast amount of resources fed to the 【Abi Sword】 produced an absurdly great feedback.

"According to 【The Butcher】 's feedback, all three of these sword cultivators practiced metal-element Dao Foundations."

"After killing them, the 【Abi Sword】 's restraint against the metal element has reached fifty percent."

"In other words, any divine abilities or Dao Methods of the metal element will have their power halved in front of the 【Abi Sword】 !"

This was already worthy of being called the nemesis of sword cultivators.

Especially effective for ambushing sword cultivators who knew nothing about this.

It could make them overestimate the power of their divine abilities, and if used well, could even kill them unexpectedly!

Besides that, there was the memory of Shangxuan True Person.

"There really is a sword pavilion cultivation method!"

This was Lü Yang's other major gain.

The Shangxuan Sword Sect had indeed received the support of the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion and had actually obtained a secret sword pavilion cultivation method.

Its name was — 『Taiyi Formless Sword』

"It's not a cultivation method, but a sword-forging secret technique."

"Using this method, one could refine a superior-grade spiritual treasure called 【Formless Sword】 by combining it with a Heavenly Fiend or Earth Sha evil."

"So that's how it is."

Lü Yang rubbed his chin, finally solving a long-standing doubt in his mind.

"So this Shangxuan True Person wasn't actually in seclusion to break through to the late stage."

"He was in seclusion forging a sword."

"I knew it, how could he have the resources to break through to the late stage?"

Late-stage Foundation Establishment was a heavenly chasm!

Even in the Primordial Saint Sect, someone like the Peak Master of Mending Heaven Peak had perished while attempting to break through to the late stage.

How could someone like Shangxuan True Person possibly have the ability to achieve that?

According to Shangxuan True Person's memory, he had indeed obtained a Heavenly Fiend or Earth Sha suitable for him.

But knowing he had no chance of becoming a Grand True Person with it, he planned to use it to forge the 【Formless Sword】 , enhance his combat power, and contribute more in future wars.

"But now, it all belongs to me."

Lü Yang smiled slightly, but soon his expression grew serious.

He then took out a small jade bottle from Shangxuan True Person's storage bag.

Inside the bottle was the Heavenly Fiend or Earth Sha that Shangxuan True Person had obtained.

It was a strand of Xin Metal Qi.

Xin Metal, among the Heavenly Fiends, was named 【Chong Guang】 !

"...What a coincidence?"

Lü Yang didn't believe it!

Was this the hidden hand left by True Person Chong Guang?

Had Shangxuan True Person obtained this Heavenly Fiend according to Chong Guang's plan to forge the 【Formless Sword】 ?

For a moment, Lü Yang was filled with countless doubts.

But at this moment, the secrets of fate and cause and effect had all been suppressed by True Lord Qingcheng Feixue.

No one could divine them.

So all he could do was speculate, unable to verify anything.

"Could it be that I ruined True Person Chong Guang's plan?"

Originally, Shangxuan True Person, as a mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator at perfection, was the stabilizing force for 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

It was almost impossible for him to fall, given his strength.

However, True Person Chong Guang probably didn't expect Lü Yang to rely on his movement techniques and the combination of Dao Methods and divine abilities to forcibly move the entire Shangxuan Sword Sect to Jiangbei.

There, Lü Yang created an opportunity to defeat many with few, and in the end, overwhelmed the sword cultivator to death.

"It's all because I'm too outstanding!"

Thinking of this, Lü Yang couldn't help but sigh, though he wasn't worried.

"I can still fix this. Anyway, the item is already in my hands. I can forge it myself..."

"...And this will also give the enemy some reaction time."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang glanced again in the direction of Zha Long Pass.

He knew very well that his southward mission this time was not truly to destroy the 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

His task was to apply pressure.

What he needed to do was to engage in a tug-of-war with the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , creating enough external conflict to give True Person Chong Guang, who had reincarnated within the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , an opportunity.

And the destruction of the Shangxuan Sword Sect should be enough to cause panic on the side of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

When that time came, what kind of response would they make?

And how would True Person Chong Guang act?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,563 words]

Inside Zhalong Pass.

The blood-polluted Qi sent into the formation by True Person Yinshan using Qi Refining cultivators during the previous great battle had already been completely cleared out, and the formation had been restored to its perfect state.

Thanks to this, the mood of the gathered True Persons had also improved significantly.

Except for Duobao Tongzi.

Because at this moment, he had already been faintly isolated.

Although True Person of the Five Elements did not speak it aloud, in his heart, he was clearly still suspecting that Duobao Tongzi was a spy planted by the Demon Sect.

This left Duobao Tongzi filled with stifled anger with nowhere to vent.

He admitted that the death of Elder Fishing Dragon was indeed somewhat related to him, but wasn't that the Demon Sect's cunning trick, which he had carelessly fallen for?

How could he possibly be a spy?

Back then, he had even been robbed by the Demon Sect!

He and the Demon Sect had a blood feud!

Everyone understood this reasoning.

However, the prejudice in people's hearts was like a great mountain.

Once a fixed perception had formed, no matter how much he tried to explain, it was extremely difficult to remove it.

Frustrated, he had no choice but to approach the Black Iron Sword Master.

After all, among the gathered True Persons, only the Black Iron Sword Master had just arrived.

He had no preconceived notions about him and would not exclude him, so at least they could have a conversation.

As for how to interact with a sword cultivator, Duobao Tongzi was quite experienced.

Just praise his sword.

“Daoist friend, may I touch your sword?”

Duobao Tongzi got straight to the point and then expressed a few words of admiration for the Upper Profound Sword Sect.

With a few exchanges, they quickly became acquainted.

“Actually, I think what the Five Elements Daoist said before was somewhat biased.” Duobao Tongzi smiled and said, “That Yuan Tu is indeed formidable, but not invincible. With your strength, as a sword cultivator, though you might not be his match, exchanging a hundred moves or so shouldn’t be a problem.”

As soon as these words came out, they struck right at the Black Iron Sword Master’s sore spot.

After all, the Five Elements True Person had left him speechless with his earlier remarks.

Now, finally hearing a fair statement, how could he not be pleased?

For a moment, he even developed a bit more goodwill toward Duobao Tongzi.

“Daoist friend flatters me.”

The Black Iron Sword Master waved his hand and said, "If that devil is truly as the Five Elements Daoist describes, I fear that only the Sect Master of our Sword Sect could fight him."

"Upper Profound True Person?"

Duobao Tongzi's eyes lit up upon hearing this, and after another round of praise, he continued, "Speaking of which, I heard that Upper Profound True Person is currently attempting to break through to the Late Stage."

"Such an endeavor is extremely dangerous. The tribulation of heavenly thunder is hard to pass. Aren't you worried, Daoist friend?"

"Hahaha!"

The Black Iron Sword Master burst out laughing upon hearing this.

"The so-called breakthrough to the Late Stage is just a false rumor we intentionally spread. How could the Sect Master be so reckless?"

"This time, the Sect Master received support from the Sword Pavilion and plans to forge a supreme spiritual sword. Once it is completed, he will immediately come to assist us. That's why I wasn't worried about anyone attacking Profound Sword Mountain before. It's because the Sect Master isn't in closed-door seclusion for a breakthrough. If a crisis arises, he can act at any time!"

"If necessary, I can even contact the Sect Master."

As he spoke, the Black Iron Sword Master took out a lamp from his sleeve.

"Before I left, the Sect Master specially refined this soul lamp and entrusted it to me."

"Within the lamp is a strand of the Sect Master's divine sense."

"With this divine sense, I can contact the Sect Master through the soul lamp at any time, keeping up with the situation at Profound Sword Mountain. What is there to worry about?"

As the Black Iron Sword Master spoke, he suddenly sensed something was wrong.

Because Duobao Tongzi before him had, for some reason, turned terrifyingly pale, his mouth twitching uncontrollably, and one finger trembling as it pointed at him.

"Daoist friend?"

The Black Iron Sword Master was taken aback.

He looked himself over—his clothes were intact, the lamp was extinguished, and his spiritual sword was undamaged.

Nothing seemed wrong.

“Hmm?”

The Black Iron Sword Master froze.

In the next moment, he blinked, and then this Mid Foundation Establishment True Person, who was usually spotless, actually wiped his eyes.

He hadn't seen wrong.

The lamp was extinguished.

Extinguished!?

With a crash, the lamp fell to the ground and shattered to pieces, as the divine sense and spiritual power that had sustained it had completely dissipated.

At this moment, the Black Iron Sword Master instead wished that Upper Profound True Person was truly in seclusion trying to break through.

Because at least then he could comfort himself, thinking the lamp had gone out because the Sect Master failed in his breakthrough.

However, right now, he could not deceive himself.

The extinguishing of the Sect Master's soul lamp could only mean one thing:

The Upper Profound Sword Sect had fallen!

“Impossible, impossible!!!”

The Black Iron Sword Master's eyes dimmed, muttering to himself, as sword Qi erupted from his entire body.

He had actually lost control of his sword heart!

However, in the next instant—

“Pa!”

A fierce slap landed hard on the Black Iron Sword Master's face, snapping him back to his senses.

He turned in confusion to look at the one who had slapped him.

It was Duobao Tongzi.

At this moment, Duobao Tongzi's face was also twisted with fear, yet his eyes shone with clarity, calm to the extreme.

"Daoist friend, don't panic."

Duobao Tongzi spoke in a deep voice, "I have already sealed off the Qi. No one knows about the situation at the Upper Profound Sword Sect yet. This is our chance! While there's still a time gap, we must quickly find a way to escape. There is no longer any need to defend Zhalong Pass!"

Duobao Tongzi saw the situation clearly.

With the fall of the Upper Profound Sword Sect, the strongest reinforcement from the Kingdom of Qing was gone.

Zhalong Pass had instantly become a rootless tree, a source without water!

In contrast, the Demon Sect's morale was at its peak.

What was the point of continuing to fight?

"Staying in Zhalong Pass is waiting for death. Now, either we find a new backer or we flee. Or are you, Daoist friend, planning to reincarnate?"

Faced with life and death, the Black Iron Sword Master quickly sobered up.

"Daoist friend... you're right!"

With the fall of the Upper Profound Sword Sect, Zhalong Pass had become a death trap.

If they didn't run now, they wouldn't be able to escape when the Demon Sect attacked from the south!

However, he soon became dispirited again.

"But even if we escape, where would we go?"

To the south?

To the Sword Pavilion?

The Sword Pavilion had funded the Upper Profound Sword Sect precisely to have them fight at this moment.

How could they allow him to desert now?

To the east?

The Kingdom of Qing would definitely make an example out of them.

To the north?

To seek refuge with the Primordial Saint Sect?

At this thought, the Black Iron Sword Master looked at Duobao Tongzi with a suspicious gaze.

You brat... could you really be a spy of the Demon Sect?

No, perhaps of the Primordial Saint Sect?

At the same time, Duobao Tongzi noticed the half-suspicious, half-expectant look in the Black Iron Sword Master's eyes and instantly understood his unspoken meaning.

"I really am not!"

Duobao Tongzi looked helpless.

At this point, he actually wished he were a spy for the Saint Sect, but he truly had nothing to do with those beasts in Jiangbei.

"I meant heading west, to submit to the Pure Land!"

As he spoke, Duobao Tongzi reached into his robe and took out a jade-carved Buddha statue.

"To tell you the truth, the Pure Land once approached me."

He truly wasn't a Saint Sect spy.

He was a Pure Land spy!

"The Great Arhat of the Pure Land promised me that as long as I brought people into the Pure Land during this war, my future status in the Pure Land would rise. I could even establish temples and monasteries there."

Duobao Tongzi spoke in a low voice, “And you, Daoist friend, are the first True Person I’ve recruited. Joining the Pure Land now has the greatest benefits. Later, you too can recruit others. The more people we bring in, the more cultivation resources we’ll have in the Pure Land in the future.”

“...”

The Black Iron Sword Master fell silent for a moment.

But when he thought of how his Sword Sect was already gone, what was there to hesitate about?

He gritted his teeth and asked, “What do I need to do?”

Duobao Tongzi was overjoyed.

“Just place your hand on the Buddha statue.”

The Black Iron Sword Master immediately reached out.

In the next instant, he felt a burst of Buddhist light rise in his sea of consciousness, like a blazing sun, illuminating his thoughts.

Immediately after, within the Buddhist light, a white lotus platform appeared, upon which sat a Dharma body.

The figure had thirty-two perfect features, wore a fleshy crown, held a Dharma implement, radiated brilliant light, and bore a compassionate smile that exuded a transcendent aura far surpassing that of an ordinary Foundation Establishment True Person.

“Amitabha.”

The four-character Buddhist chant resounded from the Dharma body, instantly calming the Black Iron Sword Master’s earlier panic and fear, bringing a serene and peaceful expression to his face.

Then, he placed his palms together and sighed.

“Ah... today I finally know who I truly am!”

“Amitabha!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 219: The Pure Land Also Wants a Share

[1,277 words]

Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, Sacred Fire Cliff.

At the same moment when the Duo Bao Child took out the Buddha statue, revealing his identity as a Pure Land undercover and attempting to recruit the Black Iron Sword Master, Qingcheng Feixue True Monarch also raised her delicate brows.

In the next second, she looked up towards Jiangxi.

"Those bald donkeys also want to interfere?"

Before her voice had even faded, a massive Buddha head, as large as a mountain, also rose within the Pure Land.

Its eyes seemed to be made of glass, and as its lips parted, it let out a wave of Buddhist chant:

"Not exactly."

In the vast hall, a grand voice echoed:

"It is merely that a junior wishes to take advantage of this great war to ferry some destined ones to my Pure Land for blessings."

"Hmph!"

A flash of crimson appeared in the beautiful eyes of Qingcheng Feixue True Monarch, as if she could barely restrain herself.

"Fine then, I won't care about that person, but you better not interfere either."

"If he dies in Jiangbei, don't come blaming me."

"Amitabha, this is only natural."

The Buddha head smiled faintly.

After all, the one he had sent was a late Foundation Establishment Great Arhat.

Unless a perfected Foundation Establishment cultivator made a move, who could possibly kill him?

Yet all perfected Foundation Establishment cultivators sought the Golden Core, and the last thing they wanted was to offend a True Monarch like him.

Who would risk offending a Bodhisattva just to kill a late Foundation Establishment Great Arhat?

It was simply not worth it, unless that person never wished to achieve Golden Core in this life!

Thus, the Buddha head remained calm.

In his eyes, Qingcheng Feixue True Monarch clearly could not withstand the pressure from the Pure Land, Dao Court, and Sword Pavilion, and had no choice but to back down.

"A wise choice."

Thinking of this, the Buddha head withdrew his gaze, secretly looking forward to the devil who cultivated the Nine Transforming Dragon Art, corresponding to the 【City Wall Earth】 .

Previously, when the 【Vase Water Moon Bodhisattva】 made a move, the effort was thwarted because of Qingcheng Feixue True Monarch's intervention.

But now presented a great opportunity.

Qingcheng Feixue True Monarch needed to protect Chong Guang and had no strength left to care for others.

It was the perfect time to ferry that devil over to the Pure Land!

At Zhalong Pass,

Looking at the Duo Bao Child and the Black Iron Sword Master before him, the Dharma body surrounded by Buddha light nodded in satisfaction and said:

"My name is 【Vimotara Revered One】 ."

In the Pure Land, Foundation Establishment cultivators were known as Arhats.

And late Foundation Establishment Great Beings were called Great Arhats, recognized as Pure Land Revered Ones who had achieved the three attainments of Slayer of Delusions, Unborn, and Worthy of Offerings.

Slayer of Delusions, meaning the severance of all delusions and confusions.

Unborn, meaning no longer reborn in the Three Realms.

Worthy of Offerings, meaning deserving of the greatest worldly offerings.

As the name suggests, figures like 【Vimotara Revered One】 could freely access the insights of the World-Honored One, encountering almost no bottlenecks in cultivating divine powers.

Moreover, with their Dharma body residing in Nirvana within the Pure Land and their soul remaining solely in the Pure Land, they were free from reincarnation unless slain.

Additionally, they received offerings from countless disciples, Dharma masters, and even Arhats within the Pure Land, preparing them for their future achievement of Bodhisattva-hood.

Thus, they earned the title of 【Revered One】 .

Upon hearing the name 【Vimotara Revered One】 , the Black Iron Sword Master became visibly excited, his expression growing increasingly respectful.

"Revered One, please save us from this sea of suffering."

"No rush."

Facing the Black Iron Sword Master's plea, 【Vimotara Revered One】 merely shook his head with a smile.

"The world is foolish, drowning in the sea of suffering. I wish to save them all."

"This..."

Hearing this, the Black Iron Sword Master frowned at once.

He had surrendered just to save his life, yet now he was being told there was no rush.

What was the point of his defection then?

"Rest assured."

"Since you have chosen to abandon darkness for light and join the Pure Land, how could I possibly abandon you?"

【Vimotara Revered One】 smiled faintly, then reached out to send forth two beams of Buddha light.

"Take these methods to study. As long as you gather the required individuals, you can surely defeat the Saint Sect."

"This is..."

The Black Iron Sword Master and Duo Bao Child exchanged glances as they received the divine sense projection from 【Vimotara Revered One】 .

In an instant, a cultivation method appeared in their minds:

『Great Mighty Virtue Bull-Headed King Empowerment Method』 !

"This method requires using a man born in a Yang year, Yang month, Yang day, and Yang hour as the medium to perform it."

"Only a Pure Yang destiny can bear this Dharma."

"As long as you find such men and engrave the scriptures I have passed to you upon their bodies, I can cast the empowerment to transform them into 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 ."

"With my authority, they can temporarily exert the combat strength of a perfected mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator!"

Duo Bao Child and the Black Iron Sword Master were utterly stunned.

Perfected mid-Foundation Establishment!?

That was already enough to change the course of the battle.

No wonder this one was called a Great Being.

Even with remote intervention, such divine power was astounding!

"I will make arrangements at once!"

Duo Bao Child hurriedly sent orders to search for suitable candidates.

The Black Iron Sword Master's eyes shone brightly.

"With the Revered One's aid, we will surely achieve a great victory over the Demon Sect this time!"

And avenge the Sect Master and the Sword Sect!

"That is secondary."

【Vimotara Revered One】 pressed his palms together, smiling faintly.

"My Pure Land has not come merely for slaughter, but to ferry the destined ones."

Duo Bao Child froze for a moment.

"Who are these destined ones?"

"I see that Yuan Tu of the Demon Sect is greatly fated with my Pure Land."

"In this battle, I will have the empowered 【Mighty Virtue King】 capture him first."

"Excellent!"

Duo Bao Child let out a loud laugh, his face full of anticipation.

Although this was not his own accomplishment, if he could use 【Vimotara Revered One】's power to severely punish Lü Yang and even force him to betray the Demon Sect and join the Pure Land, it would still count as venting his frustration.

Moreover, it would be a chance to prove himself.

Heaven and earth bear witness, the sun and moon can attest—I am truly not a Saint Sect spy!

"Then I shall entrust this task to you, Revered One."

"Amitabha."

【Vimotara Revered One】 nodded, recalling the Bodhisattva's instructions and feeling that his plan should not pose any great risk.

Personally participating in the great battle carried heavy karmic consequences and risked post-battle reckoning.

However, by using secret methods to borrow another's body without employing Great Being-level power in the fight, and with a Bodhisattva covering him, there should be little danger.

Moreover, he was rational and not greedy.

As long as he captured Lü Yang and ferried him over, he could even turn around and help the Saint Sect.

Given the grand scheme of Chong Guang seeking the Golden Core, surely no one would pursue the matter.

"If there is a flaw..." 【Vimotara Revered One】 pondered.

"This 『Great Mighty Virtue Bull-Headed King Empowerment Method』 does have a weakness—the requirement for a Pure Yang destiny male is too strict."

"The Demon Sect once created a method specifically to counter it."

The method's purpose was simple—

To turn a man into a woman.

Once the gender changed, the Pure Yang destiny would collapse.

As a result, the empowered individual would immediately die.

The backlash of the Dharma would even affect his true body, causing him to lose several years of cultivation.

"However, that method only changes gender."

Thinking of this, 【Vimotara Revered One】 quickly regained his composure.

"Apart from targeting the 『Great Mighty Virtue Bull-Headed King Empowerment Method』, it has virtually no other use."

"Surely no demon would bother to cultivate it..."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 220: Chong Guang's Backup Plan, Golden Attribute Reward!

[1,371 words]

In a secluded chamber within Gai Bamboo Mountain.

Lü Yang sat cross-legged on a meditation cushion, with strands of spiritual light floating before him.

Each strand represented a type of spiritual material, totaling three thousand six hundred kinds.

These were painstakingly collected by True Person Shangxuan, nearly depleting the resources of the Shangxuan Sword Sect.

Yet, before his death, he bestowed them all upon Lü Yang.

Immediately after, a platinum-colored aura emerged.

This was the Xin Metal Qi, also known as [Chong Guang], which he now held in his hand.

A stream of azure spiritual fire surged forth, continuously refining it.

“Fortunately, I possess a spiritual fire. Though it's intended for healing, it's still fire, and can barely suffice for refining. As for my crafting skills, thankfully, the requirements aren't high. The key lies in the materials, which True Person Shangxuan has already prepared for me. Given my level, it's adequate.”

In the next moment, Lü Yang waved his hand.

All the spiritual materials fell into his [Azure Luan Noon Fire], merging with the Xin Metal Qi, gradually forming the shape of a long sword.

However, even so, the final product wasn't ideal.

Limited by Lü Yang's own abilities, the resulting magical tool was likely of mid-grade quality. Even if it reached high-grade, it wouldn't be considered exceptional.

Fortunately, Lü Yang had already prepared a remedy.

“Now's the time!”

Without hesitation, Lü Yang took out the [Galaxy Sword Pill] gifted by Ye Xingfeng, a once high-grade flying sword now mostly destroyed.

“Perfect opportunity to make full use of it.”

With a grand gesture, Lü Yang threw the [Galaxy Sword Pill] into the flames, using it to refine the [Invisible Sword], aiming to enhance its quality.

After a long while, a long sword finally took shape within the flames.

[Invisible Sword]!

Everything proceeded smoothly. Once the magical tool was completed, it lightly fell into Lü Yang's hand, immediately emanating a strong sense of spirituality.

As Lü Yang willed it, the spiritual sword instantly vanished from sight.

Silent and invisible!

“The secret flying sword of the Jade Pivot Sword Pavilion truly lives up to its reputation!” Lü Yang exclaimed with admiration. This [Invisible Sword] and the Abhī Sword were two extremes.

The Abhī Sword required gradual accumulation of [Human Slayer], favoring overwhelming force in combat, with grand and sweeping sword lights. In contrast, the [Invisible Sword] lacked even visible sword light; when wielded, not even the blade could be seen, completely blending into the ambient light, making it impossible for ordinary people to detect before being decapitated.

“One orthodox, one unconventional—perfectly suited for me!”

Lü Yang nodded in satisfaction, then infused his divine sense into the sword, intending to explore the wonders of the high-grade spiritual treasure he had painstakingly crafted.

However, he was stunned the next second.

Because this [Invisible Sword] possessed three mystical abilities, each imbued with profound meaning, causing Lü Yang to narrow his eyes.

The first mystical ability was named [Pierce the King].

As the name implied, this sword could sense the status and power of its target; the higher the status and greater the power, the more potent the sword's strike, increasing the likelihood of a one-hit kill.

The second mystical ability was named [Coiled Steel].

Coiled Steel defied logic and order, overturning conventions. Thus, this sword wasn't bound by rules; any defensive divine abilities or techniques were ineffective against it.

This was a sword meant to assassinate kings and emperors.

Lü Yang felt a chill down his spine and turned his attention to the final mystical ability, named [Chong Guang], outwardly manifesting as a radiant golden light.

“Is this the Golden Attribute!?”

Lü Yang had encountered the innate Dao's sin before and personally experienced the transcendence brought by the Golden Attribute. At this moment, he felt the same sensation from the radiant golden light.

Was this Golden Attribute condensed from Chong Guang!?

Instinctively, Lü Yang wanted to extract it, but was repelled. The [Invisible Sword] radiated light, with the other two mystical abilities shining brilliantly.

[Pierce the King], [Coiled Steel].

A realization dawned in Lü Yang's eyes: "Is this... my reward? They want me to assassinate King Qing, and this Golden Attribute is my compensation?"

Previously, he thought that by killing True Person Shangxuan and seizing the Xin Metal Qi, he had disrupted Chong Guang's plans. Now, it seemed the opposite was true.

True Person Chong Guang had anticipated this outcome!

"No, that's not right... It's not anticipation; it's preparation. It didn't matter who the Xin Metal Qi ended up with."

If it remained with True Person Shangxuan, he would still forge the [Invisible Sword]. In a confrontation, if he were defeated, the [Invisible Sword] would still fall into Lü Yang's hands. The result remained unchanged. The only variable was if Lü Yang lost and was defeated by True Person Shangxuan—what then?

"No, that's not a variable."

Lü Yang pondered, his gaze growing brighter: "Concerning the pursuit of the Golden Attribute, how could True Person Chong Guang allow for variables? Even if they existed, he would eliminate them!"

"In other words, he must be absolutely certain."

"He can be sure that regardless of how events unfold, True Person Shangxuan will ultimately die by my hand, and I will inevitably obtain the [Invisible Sword]."

This was unsettling.

How long had Chong Guang been reincarnated? Where did this absolute certainty come from?

At this thought, Lü Yang had a hypothesis, aligning with his understanding of the Primordial Saint Sect's true persons and resolving his earlier doubts.

With this, he felt more confident.

Stowing away the [Invisible Sword], Lü Yang opened the door and stepped out of the chamber. In the next moment, True Person Yinshan descended with a flash of light, speaking gravely: “There's movement at Dragon Guillotine Pass.”

“They've launched an attack.” True Person Yinshan's expression was solemn.

“...What?”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang showed surprise: “After the Shangxuan Sword Sect's downfall, instead of fleeing, they dare to counterattack?”

Who gave them such courage?

“...A true person has intervened!”

The next moment, Lü Yang suddenly understood, realizing why True Person Yinshan's expression had turned grave—they had evidently thought of the same possibility.

“What now? Should we engage?”

True Person Yinshan spoke solemnly: “If a true person is indeed involved, we are bound to lose. But the Primordial Saint Sect won't stand idly by; someone will surely act.”

“...No rush.”

Recalling his earlier hypothesis, Lü Yang shook his head: “Let's first assess the situation. If it's truly a late-stage Foundation Establishment cultivator acting, we'll retreat immediately.”

True Person Yinshan nodded in agreement.

As true persons of the Primordial Saint Sect, they wouldn't risk their lives for others. They'd fight favorable battles, endure challenging ones, but in desperate situations, they wouldn't hesitate to flee.

Soon, the two soared into the sky.

Looking ahead, Yu Chan and Han Xiang had already led forces into battle. Countless divine abilities exploded in the heavens, while Qi Refining disciples engaged in bloody combat on the ground.

“...Seems manageable?”

Although Han Xiang and others were at a disadvantage, it was due to being outnumbered. If Lü Yang and True Person Yinshan joined the fray, the tide could quickly turn.

At that moment, Lü Yang and True Person Yinshan's presence was noticed.

Among the crowd, Duo Bao Tongzi's eyes lit up instantly. Pointing at Lü Yang, he shouted excitedly: "That's Yuan Tu! Please, Venerable, make your move!"

The next second, everyone's expressions changed dramatically!

Within Dragon Guillotine Pass, three men, their bodies inscribed with scriptures, let out agonized cries. Their flesh began to emit a golden glow.

Amidst the radiant light, the three men's expressions gradually calmed. Though they had different appearances, they now seemed as one—brows slightly raised, smiles compassionate, hands clasped in prayer. Their aura surged, all reaching the peak of the Foundation Establishment mid-stage!

"...It's the Pure Land!"

Han Xiang, Yu Chan, and others turned pale, gritting their teeth: "Damn bald monks! It's a blessing technique... A true person from the Pure Land is aiding them remotely!"

At this moment, the qualities of true persons from the Primordial Saint Sect became evident.

While Han Xiang and other Jiangbei cultivators were still in shock, Yu Chan transformed into a streak of light, shielding them. True Person Yinshan turned to flee.

However, the next moment, both halted.

"...Yuan Tu?"

True Person Yinshan looked back in confusion, only to see Lü Yang not fleeing but observing the three figures enhanced by the Buddhist light with great interest.

'These three... something's off.'

Lü Yang sensed that the trio relied on burning their own Yang energy to allow the Pure Land true person to elevate them to the peak of the Foundation Establishment mid-stage.

What if they ran out of Yang energy?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,525 words]

"Amitabha!"

At this moment, the three 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 stood side by side, pressing their palms together simultaneously, as Buddhist light surged like a breached flood, instantly filling more than half the sky.

In an instant, the ground quaked and mountains trembled, and countless divine lights wrapped around the entire battlefield, giving rise to countless forms and appearances.

There were pavilions and towers, with endless chanting of sutras, as if the battlefield had suddenly transformed into an ancient Buddhist temple, and before their eyes stood a towering figure of an ancient lamp-bearing Buddha.

In the next moment, the ancient Buddha spoke:

"Good, good, my Buddha is merciful, spreading across hundreds of millions of worlds, manifesting countless forms to save all beings burdened by karma. All of you are fated with my Western Land."

As these words fell, a pair of eyes as vast as mountains landed upon Lü Yang.

"Hahaha!"

Below, Duobao Boy chanted a Buddhist mantra while revealing a smile, and the other True Persons of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 showed expressions of excitement.

"Who would have thought Duobao could really bring the Buddhist Sect here!"

"I misunderstood him before."

"With such a powerful reinforcement from the Buddhist Sect, a Great Arhat, this is the perfect opportunity to destroy the Demon Sect and teach these Jiangbei devils a lesson!"

In the next moment, the lamp-bearing ancient Buddha took a step forward.

The Five Elements True Person, Duobao Boy, the Black Iron Swordmaster, and others followed closely behind with sinister smiles, clearly intending to take advantage of the situation and strike a drowning enemy.

Seeing this scene, Lü Yang shook his head and formed a hand seal.

【Heavenly Mother's Transformative Radiance】 !

"Amitabha, Benefactor Lü, there is no need to resist anymore, hmm?"

The 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 , who had originally intended to continue his preachings, was suddenly stunned.

He stared at the endless white radiance spreading from Lü Yang, his expression changing drastically.

"What is this...!?"

Before the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 could finish his words, he saw the yang energy on the three men's bodies suddenly reverse, transforming into the Great Yin Mother Body, freezing abruptly in midair.

The next instant, they exploded with a deafening roar!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

"Ah!!!"

The miserable cries of the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 were instantly drowned in the explosion.

The lamp-bearing ancient Buddha vanished without a trace, and the three 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 turned into fireworks.

Seeing this, Lü Yang revealed a trace of delight, and without hesitation, he waved his wide sleeves, collecting all the broken limbs and remains of the three 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 .

He planned to feed them to the Abyssal Sword later, hoping it might develop a special attack effect against the Buddhist Sect—these were all excellent materials, after all.

Only then did he turn to look at Duobao Boy and the others.

At this moment, however, the sinister smiles on Duobao Boy and the others' faces had completely frozen.

Just now, they had charged forward alongside the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 .

But now, the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 was gone.

They had instantly fallen into the encirclement of the Jiangbei True Persons.

"What are you all standing around for? Attack!"

Lü Yang laughed loudly: "Daoist Duobao, your contributions this time are immense. You sabotaged the Dao Court, then the Sword Pavilion, and now the Pure Land. The Primordial Saint Sect will reward you handsomely in the future!"

Upon hearing this, everyone suddenly showed expressions of realization.

"Duobao!!!"

The face of the Five Elements True Person twisted as he once again glared at Duobao Boy: "You are definitely a traitor! Speak! Have you long been colluding with Jiangbei?"

He had already figured it out!

The Dao Court sabotage needed no further explanation—if not for Duobao Boy, he would never have led the True Persons of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 to be tricked and slaughtered in Jiangbei.

As for sabotaging the Sword Pavilion, thinking back, when he had previously suggested that Lü Yang might ambush the Upper Profound Sword Sect, it had been Duobao who stepped out and dismissed his worries as unfounded.

And what happened?

The Upper Profound Sword Sect was truly destroyed!

If he had returned in time back then, might things have turned out differently?

As for sabotaging the Pure Land, that was exactly what was happening now.

Look at the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 —was he not miserably tricked enough?

Everyone had heard the tragic cries of that Great Arhat and Pure Land Revered One just now.

Thinking of this, the Five Elements True Person was seething with rage: "You beast! You beast!"

Duobao Boy: "..."

I'm not! I didn't! I'm innocent!

Though countless words filled his heart, Duobao Boy no longer had the mood to explain.

He didn't even understand why the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 had disappeared.

How could they lose like this?

But there was one thing he was very clear about—he truly wasn't a spy for the Primordial Saint Sect.

So if he stayed here any longer, he would surely die without a grave!

On the other side, the True Person of Yinshan revealed a look of amazement.

To be honest, when the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 appeared, he had already given up hope.

Who would have thought that Lü Yang didn't even clash with him directly?

He had merely used a strange Daoist art to effortlessly dismantle the opponent's means.

At the same time, the True Persons of Jiangbei were also invigorated.

With Lü Yang's generous rewards before them, they all knew that every 【Kingdom of Qing】 True Person they captured would earn them greater benefits.

What more needed to be said?

"Kill!"

In an instant, the entire 【Kingdom of Qing】 army collapsed like a mountain.

All Foundation Establishment True Persons scattered and fled, using all their abilities.

The Qi Refining disciples, however, were slaughtered in droves.

Zhalong Pass, fallen!

Half a day later, everything had settled.

Lü Yang stood atop Zhalong Pass, silently pondering in his heart:

"With Zhalong Pass fallen, the monopoly of spiritual energy by the 【Kingdom of Qing】 has been broken. Strictly speaking, the mission entrusted to me by True Person Chong Guang is already complete."

After all, True Person Chong Guang hadn't asked him to wipe out the 【Kingdom of Qing】 in one strike.

His goal was to apply pressure from the outside as much as possible.

With Zhalong Pass broken, the path south toward the capital of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 was now wide open.

This alone was enough to plunge the entire 【Kingdom of Qing】 into a state of panic.

"Unfortunately, there's already a new mission."

The latest novel is first released on Liú 9 Book Bar!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang once again took out the 【Invisible Sword】 .

The hidden metallic nature and mysterious power within the sword constantly reminded him of what he was supposed to do next.

【Assassinate the King】 .

Unsurprisingly, this was the second task entrusted to him by Chong Guang.

"Assassinating the King of Qing... this really is forcing the impossible."

Lü Yang shook his head.

How could the King of Qing be so easy to kill?

Not only was he surrounded by layers of guards and countless formations, but he also possessed immense personal power.

Unless the King of Qing left the capital and came alone.

Otherwise, just sneaking into that imperial palace was already nearly impossible.

Even if the Invisible Sword could break through his protective means, it would still be futile.

After pondering for a moment, Lü Yang decided to set this matter aside for now.

"Since True Person Chong Guang entrusted me with this mission, he must have considered this as well and prepared the corresponding means. It's just that the time has not yet come."

"For example, that Pure Land Revered One this time..."

Lü Yang suspected that the Pure Land was most likely set up by True Monarch Qingcheng Feixue!

Otherwise, how could it be such a coincidence?

That a Pure Land Revered One just happened to appear, and he just happened to have acquired a Daoist art from the Manifest Law Pavilion that could counter him.

Just thinking about it made Lü Yang's back turn cold.

In the next moment, Lü Yang flicked his wrist and took out the remains of the three 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 who had been transformed into female bodies and self-destructed earlier.

However, to Lü Yang's disappointment, the powers of the three 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 all came from the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】 of the Pure Land.

And with the withdrawal of the 【Vimalakirti Revered One】's power, the so-called 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 revealed their true nature—they were merely mediums used for descent.

Without their mastermind, they were nothing.

Thus, even if he used the Abyssal Sword to slay all three, he would gain nothing in return.

Even collecting them into the Myriad Spirits Banner would only waste space for the banner's spirits.

But Lü Yang wasn't entirely empty-handed.

"This is..."

Looking at the scattered remains, Lü Yang's eyes flickered as they landed on the Pure Land scriptures carved onto the bodies of these 【Mighty Virtue Kings】.

With a sweep of his divine sense, the scriptures quickly pieced themselves together.

Its name was:

" 【Return to the Right Dharma】 ?"

Lü Yang quickly skimmed through it and finally understood its purpose.

In short, this scripture could summon the divine will of a Pure Land Revered One to descend!

The so-called 【Return to the Right Dharma】 was a method created by the Pure Land specifically for their external agents.

It was used to entice and recruit more people into the Pure Land.

As long as the scripture was recited, the divine will of a Pure Land Revered One could descend to enlighten cultivators, turning them into Buddhist cultivators of the Pure Land.

Seeing this, Lü Yang's eyes suddenly lit up.

This thing seemed perfect for setting a trap.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,368 words]

The appearance of 【Returning to the True Dharma】 instantly opened up Lü Yang's mind.

In his view, this scripture was actually nothing special, the initiative was entirely on Pure Land's side, and whether it worked or not depended completely on whether Pure Land was willing to respond.

Thinking of this, he immediately called for a Qi Refining disciple.

Then he handed the scripture to him.

After all, Pure Land's scriptures had always been strange and unpredictable, and who knew what hidden dangers they might contain, so he naturally couldn't risk going himself.

So it was better to leave it to a reliable talent.

Next, he began setting up arrays around the Qi Refining disciple, the Trapping God Array, the Soul Locking Array... layers of array patterns completely surrounded that Qi Refining disciple.

In the end, Lü Yang even activated a divine ability.

“【Star Concealing Radiance】!”

This divine ability could perfectly hide causality and Qi connections, and under the cover of this ability, all the arrays were completely concealed, making everything seem perfectly normal at a glance.

That’s right, he was setting a trap!

【Returning to the True Dharma】 could summon the divine consciousness of a Pure Land Venerable, and using such a good thing merely to submit to Pure Land was simply a waste of heavenly treasures!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang couldn’t help but sigh, “The demonic cultivators of Jiangbei are really of poor quality! Their thinking is so narrow. It’s said that those near vermilion become red, and those near ink become black. These demonic cultivators have been under the rule of the Saint Sect for so long, yet they haven’t learned any of the Saint Sect’s thinking? Truly wood that cannot be carved!”

The divine consciousness of a Pure Land Venerable.

It was equivalent to a fragment of the soul of a Grand True Person, which could be used to refine top-grade soul pills or greatly enhance the spirituality of magical artifacts.

“If I can gather several strands and feed them to the Abi Sword, the Abi Sword might even evolve again!”

One had to know that even the original owner of the Abi Sword, Blood Demon True Person, had only reached late Foundation Establishment back then, and was considered an opponent on the same level as a Pure Land Venerable.

Thus, when he refined the Abi Sword, he had used the souls of True Persons at mid or early Foundation Establishment who were weaker than him.

As for Grand True Persons, the Abi Sword had never tasted them yet!

It was easy to imagine that if the Abi Sword could devour several strands of a Pure Land Venerable’s divine consciousness and use them for sword refinement, it would definitely experience a tremendous boost!

It might even gain another profound ability!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt even more motivated.

Very soon, everything was ready, and at Lü Yang's signal, that Qi Refining disciple immediately began tremblingly chanting the 【Returning to the True Dharma】 scripture.

“Rustle rustle!”

In the next moment, a beam of Buddhist light slowly emerged with his chanting, then spread out like a peacock spreading its tail, revealing a vast and boundless Pure Land scene, where a lotus platform hung high, and on the lotus platform sat a dignified Dharma body, complete with all thirty-two auspicious marks.

‘It worked!’

Hidden in the shadows, Lü Yang's face lit up with excitement as he immediately activated his hand seals, and countless Trapping God and Soul Locking arrays instantly activated, locking firmly onto that Dharma body!

“Amita Buddha, this humble monk is 【Vimalakirti Venerable】 . Hmm?”

Before the Dharma body could finish speaking, it froze in place, realizing that its connection with the main body had been mysteriously severed the moment it appeared.

‘Not good!’

Just as this thought arose, a silent, colorless, formless sword of law lightly pierced into the back of its head, emerging from its forehead.

Shlick!

In the next moment, 【Vimalakirti Venerable】 's divine consciousness was sliced apart by Lü Yang in a single sword strike, and the scattering divine consciousness was carefully gathered up by him.

“Next one. Do we have any captives from the Treasure Dividing Cliff?”

With one successful attempt under his belt, Lü Yang was even more proficient the second time, even optimizing the bait by using a Qi Refining disciple from the same sect as the Multi-Treasure Boy.

This made it even more convincing.

At this moment, in a mountain forest in Jiangbei.

“Pfft!”

With a mouthful of hot blood spurting out and evaporating upon landing, an elderly monk with white hair and beard looked towards 【Kingdom of Qing】 with a face full of dread.

Something was wrong!

Vimalakirti Venerable's heart turned cold. Lü Yang didn't believe that suppressing the 【Mighty Virtue King】 was a coincidence, so how could he not sense that something was off?

First, the three 【Mighty Virtue Kings】 he had painstakingly created had coincidentally run into their nemesis, not only achieving nothing but even rebounding and slightly injuring him.

Then, he sensed someone chanting the 【Returning to the True Dharma】 again, and the cultivation seemed to be only at the Qi Refining stage, likely a contact developed by Multi-Treasure.

So, in order to investigate the situation on 【Kingdom of Qing】's side, he specially sent out a strand of divine consciousness, only for it to go silent the moment it arrived.

“I've been played!”

Realizing this, Vimalakirti Venerable no longer dared to entertain thoughts of converting Lü Yang, and just felt that Jiangbei was nothing but a huge trap.

Yet in the next second, another sensing emerged.

“Someone's contacting me again?”

Vimalakirti Venerable fell into doubt and probed the aura briefly, finding it was, once again, a Qi Refining disciple, with nothing seemingly wrong around him.

“This person... seems to be a disciple of Multi-Treasure?”

After sensing several times, his eyes suddenly lit up, “Multi-Treasure joined Pure Land long ago, his disciple shouldn't be a problem.”

Thinking this, he immediately sent out another strand of divine consciousness.

On the other end, Lü Yang was overjoyed and immediately reeled it in.

“Gone again?”

Another strand of divine consciousness lost, leaving Vimalakirti Venerable slightly dazed. Although such losses were nothing to him, it was incredibly humiliating.

Are they treating me like a fool?

Before long, another sensing came. This time, Vimalakirti Venerable decided to go all out and directly projected a divine consciousness of Foundation Establishment level!

“Let’s see who it really is.”

Boom!

On the other side, Lü Yang was shocked to see the Pure Land Venerable still falling for it. Without hesitation, he activated the array again to capture it.

In the next second, the projected divine consciousness once again went silent. Vimalakirti Venerable’s body swayed. He was already injured from the backlash of a secret technique, and now, after repeatedly losing divine consciousness strands, especially losing a strong one this time, it truly hurt him.

However, this also snapped him awake in an instant.

“. No! Why would I do something so foolish, harming my own path... losing merit and fortune, clouding my spiritual mind... Have I been tainted by calamity Qi!?”

Vimalakirti Venerable hurriedly sat down cross-legged.

He began chanting a section of the 『Great Vehicle Fundamental Awakening Sutra』 , clearing his spiritual mind and quickly suppressing the various distracting thoughts that had just arisen.

Yet his heart was still full of doubt.

When did this happen?

He had done nothing to harm his merits, so why would heavenly punishment descend so suddenly? It made no sense!

‘No, it might not be calamity Qi. It could be something else. A True Lord could perform such a method, but with a Bodhisattva watching over me, how could I fall into such a trap? Unless... the one making the move isn’t a Bodhisattva? Foundation Establishment perfection? No, more than that! There must be a treasure involved that relates to fate!’

The more Vimalakirti Venerable thought about it, the more terrified he became.

‘Jiangbei is too dangerous... I must return to Pure Land!’

With this in mind, Vimalakirti Venerable was about to get up and leave when a hand gently reached out and helped him steady his body.

“Thank you.”

“No problem.”

Vimalakirti Venerable’s body instantly froze in place.

What had just happened?

Heaven bear witness, he was a Venerable of Pure Land, a Great Arhat. Shouldn’t he be able to return to Pure Land with just a thought? Why did he have to stand up?

And whose hand was that beside him?

Vimalakirti Venerable turned his head to look behind him, and what entered his sight was a pair of golden, radiant eyes, dim yet unwavering, like the lamplight in a hall.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,560 words]

“It’s over!”

At this moment, the heart of Vimalakirti Venerable sank more than half, only feeling his whole body turning icy cold, as if he had just wandered through an ice cave.

He did not recognize Hong Ju.

This was also normal, after all, even within the Primordial Saint Sect, apart from the True Lords and the few involved with 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 , no one knew about Hong Ju.

After all, back then, when Daoist Hong Yun enlightened Hong Ju into becoming a Foundation Establishment Realm cultivator at the Great Perfection stage, it was precisely to make him his trump card for regaining his position in the future.

Since it was a trump card, what would be the point if it was publicly announced?

Naturally, it had to be hidden in the dark in order to be effective.

Moreover, True Lord Qingchen Feixue had intentionally concealed him.

Therefore, no one had accounted for him.

During the time when Chong Guang was seeking the golden opportunity, the entire Jiangbei region was under the watchful eyes of various True Lords.

All cultivators in the late Foundation Establishment Realm, even those at the Great Perfection stage, were being monitored.

Any movement from anyone would draw a corresponding response from various factions.

Only Hong Ju stood alone.

Thus, his sudden appearance was utterly horrifying to Vimalakirti Venerable, and those eyes shining like lamps pierced straight into his heart.

‘Who exactly is this person!?’

‘In this world, which Great Perfection Foundation Establishment Realm cultivator, fully equipped with divine abilities, is not famous and well-known among the True Lords of all factions?’

‘Why would such a person suddenly appear out of nowhere!?’

Vimalakirti Venerable’s mind raced with countless thoughts, yet in his vision, a sea of raging flames suddenly erupted, and only then did he realize that his eyes had been ignited.

Flames surged out from within his body without any warning, burning through his internal organs, spraying out from his seven orifices, and setting his monk robes ablaze.

Throughout the process, Hong Ju did not even form any hand seals or cast any spells.

He merely exchanged one glance with him, and that alone turned him into a human torch!

“Ah!!!”

Vimalakirti Venerable, now a man of flames, suddenly let out a thunderous roar.

Buddhist chants echoed like thunder as he opened his mouth wide, unleashing an extremely profound Daoist art.

“【Mind Light Escape Technique】!”

Where the mind reaches, thought follows!

He had studied this Mind Light Escape Technique for hundreds of years.

Among the Venerables of the Pure Land, only he had mastered this technique to such an extent, making his escape speed the fastest.

That was why the Pure Land had sent him to Jiangbei.

With this 【Mind Light Escape Technique】 , even when facing a Great Perfection Foundation Establishment Realm cultivator, he still had a fifty percent chance of escaping, not entirely doomed!

In the next moment, Vimalakirti Venerable soared into the sky.

This sudden change rekindled a glimmer of hope in his heart, yet just as hope arose, his spiritual platform seemed to be shrouded by a layer of dust.

Countless distracting thoughts erupted all at once.

‘This person humiliated me so much, why not teach him a lesson before I leave?’

‘No rush, let’s toy with him a bit more!’

‘I, Vimalakirti, have never lost to anyone in my life! Even if my cultivation is slightly weaker and my divine abilities slightly inferior, what is there to fear in death? At most, it’s just a desperate fight to the end.’

By the time Vimalakirti Venerable finally broke free from these distracting thoughts, he realized that Hong Ju’s large hand had already gently landed on the top of his head.

Crack!

One palm strike, shattering the heavenly spirit!

At this moment, Vimalakirti Venerable’s eyes widened in disbelief.

His indestructible golden body, which he had always taken pride in, shattered like glass with a mere touch.

From the shattered flesh and blood, his soul emerged.

It was only then that a ray of white light finally emerged from the void, enveloping Vimalakirti Venerable’s soul, preventing it from falling into reincarnation.

Under the blessing of this white light, Vimalakirti Venerable finally understood why he had been so muddle-headed and utterly powerless against Hong Ju.

Above his head, at some unknown point, a slowly flipping book had appeared.

On it was clearly written a short line of words.

【Vimalakirti dies by my hand】

“So that's how it is...” Vimalakirti Venerable’s soul trembled with rage.

“A Great Perfection Foundation Establishment Realm cultivator actually used a position-bearing treasure to ambush me... Such despicable behavior.”

A Great Perfection Foundation Establishment Realm cultivator, capable of crushing him in direct combat!

And yet, he still resorted to using a position-bearing treasure to scheme against him, tricking him into sending over his divine sense like a fool.

This was nothing short of mockery, even a deliberate humiliation!

However, Hong Ju paid no attention to Vimalakirti Venerable’s anger.

“The Pure Land’s Guiding Light.”

He withdrew his hand and took a step back, looking up to the sky.

There, the clouds piled up layer upon layer, faintly revealing the image of a Buddha’s head.

Boom!

Thunder flashed within the clouds, exploding in the eyes of the Buddha’s head.

“...Bodhisattva, please forgive me.”

Seeing this, Hong Ju let out a bitter laugh.

“I, a lowly one, only seek survival. I beg the great Bodhisattva to be magnanimous and not take offense at a lowly one like me.”

Before his words had even faded, a cold snort suddenly echoed.

“Bald donkey, get back!”

In an instant, snow flew in the summer sky.

A fierce wind scattered the clouded Buddha's head image in the sky, cutting off the angry gaze from the Pure Land beyond Jiangbei.

In the next second, all visions vanished.

Vimalakirti's soul, under the Pure Land's Guiding Light, returned to the Pure Land.

This was one of the benefits of becoming a Great Perfection cultivator in the Pure Land.

There was no need for reincarnation.

Even in death, one would simply reform within the Pure Land, free from the suffering of the cycle of rebirth.

Seeing this, Hong Ju finally breathed a sigh of relief.

Then, he first glanced in the direction of Zha Long Pass.

After that, he turned back to look toward the Primordial Saint Sect.

Soon, a faint voice drifted through the air.

"Since the Pure Land has made a move, you may make a move as well."

As the voice fell, no one from any faction responded.

It seemed they tacitly agreed to this decision.

Seeing this, Hong Ju no longer hesitated and immediately stepped toward Zha Long Pass.

In the blink of an eye, he appeared in a secret chamber.

Inside the chamber, Lü Yang was still operating the formation, collecting all of Vimalakirti Venerable's divine senses.

Almost immediately, Lü Yang raised his head and looked over.

"...Greetings, Senior."

Lü Yang reacted quickly, immediately bowing and saying,

"May I ask if that monk has been dealt with? Is there anything this junior can do to assist?"

"...Quite the quick reaction."

Looking at Lü Yang, Hong Ju's expression turned somewhat complicated.

After all, not long ago, he had racked his brain trying to take this person's life.

But now, he had to save him instead.

"The one who made the move was named Vimalakirti."

Hong Ju got straight to the point and said directly,

"I clouded his spiritual platform, making him send several strands of divine sense to you. Can we consider our past grievances settled?"

As soon as these words came out, Lü Yang was slightly stunned.

But he quickly reacted.

The Saint Sect's Great Perfection cultivator who held a grudge against him... was this person the very one who had initiated the heavenly killing intent against him?

Realizing this, Lü Yang hurriedly bowed.

"Senior flatters me."

"In the past, it was nothing more than trivial matters. This junior has never dared to hold a grudge, so what is there to settle? I beg Senior not to take it to heart."

"..."

Hong Ju let out a sigh.

We are both True Persons of the Saint Sect, do you really take me for a fool?

Saying you never held a grudge means you actually do hold a grudge.

Talking about settling things means you are unwilling to settle things!

This person really held a petty mind!

"...This time, with True Lord's permission, I can lend you a hand."

Hong Ju extended his hand, and in his palm floated a strand of golden mist.

"This is a portion of Vimalakirti's merit and fortune, which I extracted."

Immediately after, he took out a book.

“This item is called 【Shared Fate Fortune Changing Talisman Book】 .”

“It requires the consumption of merit and fortune to leave inscriptions on it. Whatever is written will be pushed by Heaven and Earth to happen.”

After finishing his explanation, he handed both items to Lü Yang.

“I am lending these to you for now. You may write on it, but you are limited to one sentence.”

“From now on, let us call our karma settled. We may still be colleagues in the future, so let’s not pursue this further.”

Although in terms of cultivation, he could outpace Lü Yang by ten leagues.

Unfortunately, Lü Yang had strong backing.

If Chong Guang successfully ascended to the throne in the future, Hong Ju would have to rely on Chong Guang for survival.

In such a situation, offending someone like Lü Yang, who was a favored figure at Chong Guang’s side—what if Lü Yang made things difficult for him later?

The only choice was to spend wealth to ward off disaster.

On the other side, Lü Yang stared directly at the 【Shared Fate Fortune Changing Talisman Book】 , his eyes shining slightly.

This was the miraculous treasure that could trigger heavenly killing intent?

‘Truly foolproof, truly foolproof!’

‘I just wonder if this is Chong Guang’s hidden move or True Lord Feixue’s arrangement...’

‘With this in hand, assassinating that Prince Qing of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 will no longer be a problem!’

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,654 words]

Qing Kingdom, the Capital.

As the capital of a nation, this place was the stabilizing pillar of the entire Qing Kingdom. Whether the Qing Kingdom was in chaos or not could be seen from the changes in the atmosphere within the city.

Early this morning, the city was still peaceful. However, as the battle report of Zhalong Pass being breached at the frontlines arrived, from the officials down to the common people, all fell into panic. All kinds of rumors spread more and more wildly, with some even claiming to have seen the figures of Demon Sect cultivators eight hundred miles away.

"Trash! A bunch of trash!"

Inside the Golden Hall, King Qing had already lost much of his former noble and majestic demeanor. His face twisted with rage, clearly furious to the extreme.

Kneeling below was a young man.

The top scholar of the most recent imperial examination, Zhong Xin.

This once proud top scholar was now half-covered in blood, his aura weak, yet he did not utter a single word, appearing ready to accept any punishment from King Qing.

"Your servant is incompetent."

"You are incompetent! I entrusted more than half of the 【Qing Kingdom】 to you, ordering you to hold Zhalong Pass. And yet, after just a few days? The dead are dead, the escaped have fled."

King Qing grabbed the flower vase beside him and smashed it onto Zhong Xin's body. The vase shattered, but Zhong Xin remained motionless, still lowering his head in silence.

On the contrary, after throwing the vase, King Qing seemed to calm down a bit. He hurried over to Zhong Xin and personally helped him up:

"I was blinded by anger for a moment... Beloved minister, do not take offense!"

Hearing this, Zhong Xin shook his head:

"Your servant has indeed failed Your Majesty's great expectations. Therefore, no matter how Your Majesty punishes me, your servant is willing to accept it wholeheartedly."

"Ah, you... are just too loyal!"

King Qing sighed emotionally:

"Among all the civil and military officials of the court, not a single one is as loyal as you. At this moment, I fear some have already packed their belongings and are preparing to flee!"

After saying that, he picked up a pile of memorials from the desk beside him.

"Take a look."

King Qing looked powerless as he sighed:

"Ever since the northern army approached Zhalong Pass, the entire Qing Kingdom suddenly fell into chaos. There are actually eighty-one rebel forces!"

"Behind these rebels, there is undoubtedly the hand of the Demon Sect. Chong Guang must be hiding among them!"

Speaking of this, King Qing kicked over the table and chairs beside him in fury, trembling with rage:

"If this continues, they might really break into the royal palace."

Just thinking about it made King Qing feel a wave of terror. He was the king of Qing Kingdom, personally appointed by the Eastern Heavenly Son, born with the mandate of heaven. The thought of those lowly peasants possibly stepping into his palace and overthrowing him made him wish he could grind everyone's bones to dust.

"The situation has come to this, we cannot wait any longer!"

With that in mind, King Qing immediately looked at Zhong Xin:

"My mind is made up. Today, I shall bestow upon you the Emperor's Sword, the Token and Axe of Command, to sweep away the internal and external traitors on my behalf!"

All of this was due to the overwhelming pressure brought by the Demon Sect.

The system of the Dao Court was based on governance and stability. Once thrown into chaos, order would collapse, and the official positions granted by the Dao Court would weaken in their enhancement of one's cultivation.

If this continued, King Qing feared that even if he empowered Zhong Xin with his royal position, it might no longer grant the power of a Grand True Person. By then, it would truly be a dead end with no hope of turning the tide. Therefore, he had to take advantage of the moment while Zhong Xin could still exert the power of a Grand True Person and quickly send him to battle on his behalf!

In this way, the situation would surely improve.

With this thought, King Qing immediately began to make arrangements. He summoned the eunuchs to set up the ceremonial rites, brought forth the talismanic token and axe, and then drew the ceremonial sword from his waist.

The Token and Axe of Command allowed one to exercise authority on behalf of the ruler.

Such a major matter could not be decided with just a single word. King Qing had to personally conduct the rites. Normally, a grand ritual ceremony would have been held.

However, given the urgency of the current situation, everything had to be simplified.

"Beloved minister, everything will depend on you from now on."

With a face full of emotion, King Qing personally handed the Emperor's Sword, the talismanic token, the axe, and other items to Zhong Xin. Along with them, he also transferred an official title.

【Lingxiao Qingyun Universal Salvation Guardian of the North King】

This was the highest official title in the 【Qing Kingdom】. Although it was merely a vassal king title within the Dao Court's system, it still carried unfathomable might.

Zhong Xin said nothing and respectfully accepted it.

Seeing this, King Qing nodded in satisfaction, watching Zhong Xin's aura rapidly soar, surpassing the limits of mid-Foundation Establishment in the blink of an eye.

Of course, this was merely a temporary empowerment.

The key to the Token and Axe of Command was the word "temporary". As long as King Qing wished, he could revoke this official position at any time, so he felt very assured.

However, he quickly realized something was wrong.

Because Zhong Xin's aura was still rising, showing no signs of stopping even after reaching late Foundation Establishment. One after another, radiant divine powers surged from within him!

"So powerful?"

At this point, King Qing still hadn't noticed anything amiss. He was merely surprised that this official title could elevate someone to such a high realm.

But when Zhong Xin's aura broke through the bottleneck of late Foundation Establishment without any hindrance, revealing an aura of "perfection" and "flawlessness", King Qing finally sensed that something was wrong.

How could a temporary empowerment be even stronger than his personal control?

'Something's not right!'

In an instant, King Qing's pupils contracted. Almost by instinct, he tried to revoke the official title he had just bestowed.

However, a sudden chill spread from his chest.

All words were stuck in his throat.

Because behind him, accompanied by a burst of brilliant divine light, a figure silently appeared, and an invisible sword blade had already pierced through his chest.

【Assassinate the King】 ! 【Pan Gang】 !

Two layers of mystical empowerment, the invisible sword blade encountered no resistance!

'An assassin!? Impossible!'

King Qing's eyes widened. He could not believe that an assassin could have infiltrated the heavily guarded Golden Hall. This place should have been sealed against spatial movement!

Who was it? Why?

King Qing struggled to look back but saw nothing of the assassin except for a single hand holding a talismanic book.

The pages flipped rapidly, revealing the words:

【Lü Yang kills King Qing before the court】

Heaven's Killing Intent! A fated death!

With the empowerment of this Heaven's Killing Intent, Lü Yang experienced for the first time what it meant to be divinely assisted, what it meant for heaven and earth to lend their power.

From beginning to end, he had only done one thing.

His innate divine power, 【Determine Kinship and Estrangement】 !

Normally, he and King Qing had never even met, with no karmic ties at all. It should have been impossible to use 【Determine Kinship and Estrangement】 to instantly teleport to his side.

Yet under the push of Heaven's Killing Intent, he not only clearly sensed the karmic link between himself and King Qing, but with a single thought, he had teleported from thousands of miles away to appear behind King Qing.

Moreover, through instinct, he grasped the perfect timing and effortlessly killed him!

"Swish!"

The 【Invisible Sword】 flashed and vanished, carrying a spray of blood, slicing the wide-eyed, unresigned King Qing in half. Blood instantly drenched half of the Golden Hall.

In that moment, heaven and earth fell silent.

The surrounding eunuchs, King Qing's expression, and all sounds seemed to disappear at that instant. Dark clouds unknowingly gathered above the capital of the Qing Kingdom.

"Rumble!"

The entire capital trembled slightly at that moment. The howling wind sounded like someone roaring in anger, slicing across Zhong Xin and Lü Yang like steel blades.

Yet at that moment, Zhong Xin also raised his head.

That face, which had always been "loyal", "respectful", having served diligently for decades without showing the slightest anomaly, now wore a mocking smile.

If King Qing had not died, he naturally could have reclaimed the official position.

However, now he was dead.

Not only had he died within this deep palace, but before dying, he had also transferred the Token and Axe of Command. In just one move, Zhong Xin had become the highest authority in the 【Qing Kingdom】 !

"Sirs, pardon me."

As the words fell, Zhong Xin's face continued to change. Flesh and blood peeled away like a mask being removed, revealing a face that Lü Yang was all too familiar with.

True Person Chong Guang!

'So it really was him...'

Seeing this scene, Lü Yang immediately muttered in his heart.

Zhong Xin was Chong Guang!

All the talk of recent reincarnation had been complete nonsense, fooling everyone. Even with the assistance of Pure Snow True Lord, they had deceived even the Heavenly Secrets and Karmic Threads!

No wonder he hadn't chosen to flee overseas back then.

The one who had first appeared at Sacred Fire Cliff was likely just an avatar all along. The babies appearing across the Qing Kingdom had all been mere distractions.

He had actually reincarnated long ago!

As for what True Person Yinshan had told Lü Yang, about relying on an "uprising" to overturn the Dao Court's system from the bottom up, it was all deliberately leaked misinformation to confuse and mislead!

It was all a feint, concealing the real plan.

After all, overturning the Dao Court's system in the 【Qing Kingdom】 did not necessarily have to start from a bottom-up "uprising". It could also be achieved through a top-down "seizure of power"!

Chong Guang was about to achieve the Dao!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 225: Truly Worthy of Being the Pillar of My Saint Sect!

[1,466 words]

At this moment, heaven and earth fell silent.

In Jiangdong, Jiangbei, Jiangxi, and Jiangnan, towering Dharma Bodies rose from the ground, breaking through the thirty-six layers of Gang Clouds, gazing into the distance toward the direction of Chongguang.

Above the firmament, the stars manifested.

These were not real stars, but the manifestations of those holding fruit positions; some radiated Buddhist light, some released rampant sword Qi, and those at the Foundation Establishment Realm were a tangled mess.

However, in the next second, a violent wind swept through.

The wind flew for a thousand miles, snow drifted across ten states, instantly cutting off all the strange phenomena—surprisingly, it was True Lord Clear Snow in Flight who had acted, blocking all prying eyes.

At an unknown time, radiant light had already begun to emerge from Chongguang's body.

Not only from him, but the entire Kingdom of Qing, from the highest officials to the commoners, all began to glow with radiant light, looking at their own bodies in astonishment.

This light spread outward from them at the center, quickly expanding in all directions—houses, cities, mountains, rivers—and finally, even the cultivators of the Kingdom of Qing were tainted by it, from Qi Refining, to Foundation Establishment, to Mid Foundation Establishment, and even the escaping True Person of the Five Elements was no exception.

“What is this?”

True Person of the Five Elements looked astonished.

As a True Person at the Mid Foundation Establishment Realm, he could see more truths than the clueless mortals.

Thus, he quickly discovered the source of the radiant light.

【Official Position】 .

He had long since pledged loyalty to the Dao Court and had received an official position from it, and now, it was this very 【Official Position】 he had accepted that was emitting radiant light.

“Something's not right!”

At this moment, True Person of the Five Elements suddenly felt a sense of foreboding in his heart and immediately activated his magic power, intending to discard the 【Official Position】 on his body.

However, how could a Dao Court position be discarded so easily?

Thus, as he activated his magic power, not only did the radiant light from the 【Official Position】 fail to diminish, it even expanded further, and at an increasingly rapid pace.

It was like a single lamp.

A single lamp might be insignificant, illuminating only a small space, but a hundred, a thousand, ten thousand lamps could erupt with brilliance like that of the sun.

“Pa!”

In the next second, the lamps were lit.

The first to be ignited were the residents of the capital of the Kingdom of Qing.

They burned fiercely in their bewilderment, their flesh turning into lamp oil, their muscles and bones becoming lamp stands.

This burning quickly spread.

At first, it was just the mortals, then the cultivators, followed by houses, cities, and finally, the entire Kingdom of Qing was engulfed in flames!

No one could resist, because they were merely 【Subjects】 , while Chongguang was the 【Sovereign】 !

If the sovereign wanted the subjects dead, the subjects had no choice but to die!

The flames consumed the entire Kingdom of Qing, leaving only piles of white bones in their wake; all had become fuel for the flames!

In an instant, countless astonished gazes from all directions converged on True Person Chongguang, staring into his gentle and calm eyes.

Even Lü Yang revealed a hint of surprise.

In the Saint Sect, True Person Chongguang had always had a relatively good reputation, considered one of the less beastly ones, and a good leader to his subordinates.

Yet now, he had done something like this.

A blood sacrifice of the entire 【Kingdom of Qing】 !

This grand spectacle, this vast land, had suddenly been drained of all life by him, turning millions of citizens into fuel for his lamps!

In the past, Lü Yang had also considered the fact that the Kingdom of Qing, as a wonder infiltrated by the Dao Court into Jiangbei, had long been deeply influenced by the True Lord's fruit position.

It could be reversed, but never completely expelled.

You could reverse it today, but the Dao Court could restore it tomorrow.

It would only result in a tug-of-war, so what meaning would that have?

Now Chongguang had provided the answer.

Reversing the rules was only the first step.

Now that the 【Seizure of Power】 had succeeded, he never intended to keep the 【Kingdom of Qing】 at all, but planned to end it once and for all!

By killing everyone, the 【Kingdom of Qing】 would naturally cease to exist!

Others might call it cruel, but in the Saint Sect, they generally called it efficient.

“Under heaven, only the Dao Court system is capable of something like this.” True Person Chongguang said with a smile, then turned his gaze toward Lü Yang.

“But next, Yuan Tu, you will have to suffer a bit.”

Lü Yang was stunned upon hearing this: “What?”

Boom!

Almost at the same time, dark clouds gathered above the firmament, with flashes of lightning appearing—clearly a heavenly punishment!

But the target was not True Person Chongguang—it was Lü Yang!

“Why is it striking me!?”

Lü Yang's face turned extremely grim.

At this moment, the situation had been settled, and True Lord Clear Snow in Flight had released the karmic bindings, so he quickly calculated the cause.

'It's because True Person Chongguang is framing me!'

'The 【Kingdom of Qing】 , as a wonder, was not just part of the Dao Court but also a part of heaven and earth, once integrated by the Dao Court's Emperor.'

'However, now, True Person Chongguang had performed a blood sacrifice on the entire 【Kingdom of Qing】 , turning it into the resource for his advancement to True Lord.'

'This was equivalent to cutting flesh from the body of heaven and earth itself, harming heaven and benefiting himself.'

'This act was far more severe than damaging the earth veins; how could such behavior not incur heavenly punishment?'

In an instant, Lü Yang came to a realization:

'So that's why he had me kill the King of Qing!'

'Because I killed the King of Qing, Chongguang could achieve all of this, making me the true initiator, allowing him to shift all heavenly punishment onto me!'

What a beast!!!

Pretending to be a good leader all along, providing protection and casually gifting all kinds of spiritual treasures, just to set me up like this?

Is this how a leader should act!?

(Latest novel first published on 69 Book Bar!)

At this thought, Lü Yang couldn't help but look at True Person Chongguang.

I trusted you so much!

And this is how you betray such a loyal subordinate like me?

——Fortunately, I had long been prepared.

In the next second, without hesitation, Lü Yang activated the Heaven-Deceiving Great Method he had obtained from True Person Blood Demon, transferring all the descending heavenly punishment elsewhere.

And the targets of the transfer were none other than the many Foundation Establishment True Persons of Jiangbei who had previously received his generous gifts, countless divine powers, cultivation methods, and spiritual treasures!

These were all karmic debts—now, return them to me!

In an instant, the dark clouds that had almost locked onto Lü Yang suddenly paused, as if discerning something.

Then, with a loud explosion in the sky, they shattered into pieces, splitting into more than a dozen smaller dark clouds, flying toward the direction of Zhalong Pass, no longer bothering Lü Yang.

“Oh?”

Seeing this scene, even True Person Chongguang showed a look of surprise.

He immediately calculated with his fingers, then let out a hearty laugh.

“Hahaha, well done!”

“Truly worthy of being the pillar of my Saint Sect!”

As his voice fell, Lü Yang saw the 【Invisible Sword】 in his hand bloom with radiant light.

A strand of metal essence detached from it, gently falling into his palm.

“You deserve this.”

True Person Chongguang's voice drifted over, and Lü Yang accepted it calmly.

Because only he understood the true meaning behind True Person Chongguang's words.

Why had True Person Chongguang used this strand of metal essence as a reward?

Because with the protection of the metal essence, one would not be shrouded by the enigma of the womb during reincarnation.

And in Chongguang's eyes, after being struck by heavenly punishment, Lü Yang would surely end up like the former Arhat Fulong, utterly ruined, destined to live countless lifetimes as livestock.

Thus, he had bestowed a strand of metal essence to prevent total downfall.

After the tribulation ended, there would still be a chance to return.

This was probably one of the few remaining bits of kindness from True Person Chongguang.

After all, Lü Yang was indeed a fine talent and very handy to use.

However, Lü Yang had not been struck by heavenly punishment.

Since that was the case, this strand of metal essence was purely Lü Yang's reward—something he had earned through his own ability, and Chongguang had acknowledged this achievement.

“All right, you may step down.”

True Person Chongguang waved his hand, signaling Lü Yang to withdraw.

From beginning to end, he had never shown any vicious or ruthless expression, only calm and peace.

Calmly igniting the 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

Peacefully slaughtering everyone.

Including Lü Yang, whom he had unhesitatingly used to shift the heavenly punishment.

Though he never said it outright, his every word and action conveyed one message: to prove my fruit position, your deaths were worth it!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 226: Ascending the Blessed Land, Floating Boat in the Sea of Suffering

[1,407 words]

The lights were blazing.

Duobao Tongzi stared blankly at everything around him; all he could see were the lit torches, with the most intense flames engulfing the Xuan Iron Sword Master beside him.

At that moment, they were in conversation.

The two had barely escaped from Zhalong Pass and were discussing plans to smuggle themselves into the Buddhist lands of Jiangxi when a radiant glow suddenly emanated from the Xuan Iron Sword Master's body.

Then he spontaneously combusted.

There was nothing they could do, no time to react; Duobao Tongzi could only watch as the Xuan Iron Sword Master's despair-filled eyes turned into two fireballs, his mid-Foundation Establishment cultivation transforming into fuel, and the flames that ignited from him instantly spread across several cities.

The world fell silent.

Only the flames continued to spread quietly, turning the sky a fiery red. Duobao Tongzi stood amidst it all, feeling as if he were inside a pill furnace.

"Jiangbei Demon. Primordial Saint Sect. What a Saint Sect!"

At this moment, Duobao Tongzi's past resentment towards the Primordial Saint Sect was like the millions of lives, mountains, rivers, and valleys consumed by the fire—completely burned away.

Only ash-like fear remained.

Millions of people! Countless cultivators! Even if he killed them himself, it would take three days and nights. Yet now, they were all ignited by a single flame!

How could this still be considered human?

The next second, a gentle breeze blew past Duobao Tongzi's face, carrying the scorching heat of the flames, causing him to involuntarily squint his eyes.

Where did the wind come from?

Duobao Tongzi looked around but found nothing, then suddenly realized: "Foundation Establishment Realm!? It's the Bì Wind! The fire is reaching into the Foundation Establishment Realm!"

Boom!

With this thought, Duobao Tongzi immediately fled into the Foundation Establishment Realm. As expected, what he saw was an endless sea of raging fire.

However, amidst the towering flames, he also saw countless jade towers and pavilions being reforged in the fire, rising from the ground. Various landscapes transformed from illusions under the intense heat into reality, eventually radiating brilliant light in the Foundation Establishment Realm, like a sun about to rise into the sky!

"Rise!"

In an instant, a clear and loud shout echoed in all directions, and then he saw that sun-like blazing land actually ascending into the sky of the Foundation Establishment Realm!

The Blessed Land Ascends!

"It truly succeeded. Chongguang has begun his ascension, seeking the Golden Fruit, and the Blessed Land is ascending! Once he attains the Fruit Position and transforms into a Cave Heaven, he will become a True Lord!"

"The millennium catastrophe draws even closer!"

At Zhalong Pass, True Person Yinshan showed an excited expression:

"Zhong Xin. It's actually Zhong Xin! Senior Brother's plans are far-reaching, fully prepared this time, and with True Lord Feixue protecting the Dharma, this ascension is almost certain!"

At the same time, beside True Person Yinshan, a man in golden robes stepped forward. His chiseled face showed a hint of anticipation; it was none other than Hong Ju, who had previously sent Vimalakirti Venerable back to the Pure Land with a single move. However, now his body was covered with fine cracks.

His time was almost up.

After all, with the death of Daoist Hong Yun, Hong Ju, as his creation, was like water without a source. Every action consumed his limited lifespan.

This time was his final gamble.

If he succeeded, Chongguang would ascend, and he could extend his life, living freely. If he failed, he would return to the void, his consciousness dissipating, without even reincarnation.

Despite this, Hong Ju remained calm.

Because he still retained the memories of Daoist Hong Yun's ascension. In his view, Chongguang True Person's preparations were far more thorough than those of Daoist Hong Yun.

"With a True Lord protecting the Dharma, the Pure Land's intervention severed, the Dao Court and Sword Pavilion can only acquiesce. Chongguang himself has refined complete metal nature, blood-sacrificed the entire Kingdom of Qing, using this spectacle as the driving force for his Blessed Land's ascension, and avoided the impact of heavenly punishment."

"That's a spectacle!"

"Among all the resources usable for breaking through to True Lord, a spectacle is considered top-tier. If not for the inevitable heavenly punishment upon acquisition, countless people would fight over it."

"With the support of a spectacle, ascending the Blessed Land is almost effortless."

"At the same time, he used the method of 'seizing power' to reverse the Dao Court's rules in the Kingdom of Qing, causing the emperor to lose his position and order to collapse, undoubtedly attracting the favor of the Fruit Position!"

Thinking of this, Hong Ju looked up at the sky.

Not the sky of the present world, but the sky of the Foundation Establishment Realm. There, a golden lamp light gradually lit up, manifesting the image of the "Overturning Lamp Fire"!

At this moment, Hong Ju reached his conclusion:

"The chance of success is ten out of ten!"

Indeed, in his view, the probability of Chongguang's breakthrough this time was ten out of ten, with no flaws, theoretically absolutely impossible to fail!

Meanwhile, within the Foundation Establishment Realm.

Chongguang True Person stood with hands behind his back, his entire essence, energy, and spirit, along with his four innate talents and perfected divine abilities, all supporting the Blessed Land of Dongyang behind him.

The brilliance of the "Overturning Lamp Fire" grew closer.

At this moment, Chongguang True Person felt a sense of relief, as if rising step by step from the depths of the sea, finally breathing fresh air.

Soon, everything changed.

What he saw was a void; this was the "sky" of the Foundation Establishment Realm, also the location of the Fruit Position, described differently in various traditions.

In Jiangnan and Jiangbei, the Ascension Dao described it as "a realm of light surrounding the Dharma realm, the void shining with the heart of heaven."

In Jiangxi's Pure Land, the Buddhist cultivators described this area as "neither born nor destroyed, clouds dispersing in the azure sky, mountain colors pure, neither coming nor going, wisdom returning to meditative tranquility, the solitary moon wheel."

In Jiangdong's Dao Court, the description changed to "entering sudden enlightenment from gradual practice, entering non-action from action, entering true emptiness from non-emptiness."

All these descriptions ultimately referred to it with a simpler term:

The Sea of Suffering.

"Above the Foundation Establishment Realm lies the Sea of Suffering!"

"All beings in the mortal world are tumbling in the Sea of Suffering!"

"The Fruit Position is like boats on the Sea of Suffering; only by becoming a True Lord can one ascend the Blessed Land, float above the Sea of Suffering, and take control of those boats!"

So where does the Sea of Suffering come from?

Before long, Chongguang True Person developed many sensations, vaguely seeing many cultivators who had practiced techniques related to the "Overturning Lamp Fire."

Qi Refining cultivators were meaningless.

What was useful to him were cultivators who had established their Dao foundation. With his ascension, the Fruit Position, as a "boat," became much heavier with someone boarding it.

In an instant, countless ripples spread.

These ripples were insignificant in the Sea of Suffering, but when they fell into the Foundation Establishment Realm below, they turned into a powerful wind capable of eroding souls.

The Bì Wind!

Every True Person who had established a Dao foundation related to the "Overturning Lamp Fire" endured the Bì Wind, using their own Dao foundation and lifelong cultivation to support the "Overturning Lamp Fire." Why did the Foundation Establishment Realm

have the three great tribulations of wind, fire, and thunder? It was because of the Fruit Position and Cave Heaven above!

"So that's how it is..."

A look of realization appeared in Chongguang True Person's eyes; this was a secret only True Lords could see and comprehend, forever inaccessible to those who hadn't become True Lords.

But it made sense.

Foundation Establishment True Persons are "people," while Golden Core True Lords are "lords." Looking at the world, where is there a "lord" who doesn't levy various harsh taxes from the "people"?

This was also one of the reasons Golden Core True Lords controlled the number of Foundation Establishment cultivators!

Because if the taxes were too heavy and there were too many people, they would rebel. If there were too few people, the taxes collected wouldn't be enough, affecting the lord's condition.

"The mortal world is a vast Sea of Suffering..."

Thinking of this, Chongguang True Person couldn't help but sigh. However, this sigh quickly turned into excitement because he was about to reach the shore!

But at that moment.

"...Hmm?"

As he got closer to the "Overturning Lamp Fire," he suddenly noticed that the "Overturning Lamp Fire" before him was different from what he had expected, causing him to freeze in place.

"This is... but how could it be?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 227: Absorbing Metal Essence, the Change of the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes!

[1,405 words]

"Golden Core, huh?"

Lü Yang withdrew his gaze with undisguised envy as he watched True Person Chong Guang and his 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 soar higher and higher toward the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 .

'No rush, I will reach that day as well.'

With the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 in hand, Lü Yang had never doubted his future.

As long as he followed the path step by step, he would definitely ascend to the peak!

Of course, that was a matter for the future.

"Thinking about the Golden Core now is too early. Better to check the harvest first." Lü Yang shifted his gaze to the Metal Essence left behind by True Person Chong Guang.

Then, he froze.

Because at that moment, the illusory panel of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 suddenly materialized out of thin air and, like a mad dog pouncing on its prey, devoured that strand of Metal Essence!

'What the hell!'

In that instant, Lü Yang almost felt his soul leave his body.

Metal Essence was something that naturally drew attention.

What's more, with True Person Chong Guang currently undergoing a breakthrough, at least two-thirds of the True Persons in the world were watching in the open or in secret.

And now the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes had directly devoured the Metal Essence—wasn't this obviously suspicious?

Thinking of this, Lü Yang's hair stood on end.

He feared someone might suddenly appear behind him and coldly ask, "What are you doing?" before a giant hand descended from the sky to grab him and refine him in an instant.

After a while, Lü Yang subtly let out a sigh of relief.

No one came.

'You really are something, 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 !'

This cheat was truly different!

To swallow a strand of Metal Essence right under the watchful eyes of so many True Persons and not be discovered—that alone greatly reassured Lü Yang.

However, after the relief, doubt arose in his heart.

Since his transmigration, the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 had never shown the slightest interest in anything other than himself.

This was its first time actively devouring something external.

This made Lü Yang involuntarily have a thought: Could the Metal Essence replenish the book's pages?

A hundred lifetimes were still too few!

In this treacherous place, every step of cultivation was like walking on thin ice.

With just a hundred lifetimes, Lü Yang was confident in reaching the Golden Core, but he had no certainty about reaching the Nascent Soul.

But if Metal Essence could replenish the pages, that would change everything.

After all, right now, he already had two Metal Essence refresh points—"Chong Guang" and "Innate Dao Sin".

He could harvest them once every lifetime.

It was equivalent to infinite extra lives!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang excitedly looked toward the interface of the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 .

Yet, as the information flowed into his mind, his expression turned strange.

The bad news was that Metal Essence could not replenish the pages.

The good news was—

'Settling someone else's life?'

Lü Yang stared at the data on the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 panel, a peculiar expression on his face:

'Metal Essence is useless to the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 ; what it values is the life experience contained within.'

The so-called Metal Essence was the essence of a person's soul.

It was the refined true nature of one's entire lifetime of thoughts and experiences, containing their whole life story.

This was what the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 wanted to devour—essentially a phantom simulation!

'After devouring it, the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 can settle that life.'

'This kind of settlement is different from the settlement after each of my restarts. It cannot bring back treasures or cultivation. The only thing that can be brought back is talent based on that life.'

'...What a treasure!'

In an instant, Lü Yang's eyes lit up.

Although he could not bring back cultivation or treasures, the ability to derive talents was already incredibly powerful!

He had always been well aware of how strong the talents provided by the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 were.

Unfortunately, each time he reincarnated, he had more important things to exchange for, so he had never drawn talents until now.

But this time was different!

'Chong Guang's talent must be golden!'

After all, he had been a True Person at the peak of Foundation Establishment, with such a rich life experience that he could be called a legend of his generation.

It had to be a golden talent.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately activated his intent.

'Settle!'

In the next moment, a faint light began to appear on the 【Book of a Hundred Lifetimes】 .

The light transformed into streams of data, finally forming dense text.

【Settling the life of "Chong Guang"...】

【As a strand of "Xin Metal Qi", one of the Heavenly Stars and Earthly Fiends, you encountered a great opportunity and unexpectedly gained sentience, becoming a naturally born celestial spirit.】

".Celestial Spirit?"

Lü Yang paused, recognizing this term.

Back then, the Blood Demon True Person had been struck by heavenly punishment precisely because he had mistakenly slain a Celestial Spirit.

Celestial Spirits were naturally born and nurtured by heaven and earth, possessing an innate status.

Once they gained sentience, they would receive the blessing of heaven and earth, making them naturally born Foundation Establishment True Persons.

Moreover, a Celestial Spirit's strength was fixed, determined by their foundation before gaining sentience.

The strongest Celestial Spirits could even rival the peak of Foundation Establishment.

So True Person Chong Guang was the reincarnation of a Celestial Spirit?

"No wonder his Dao title is 【Chong Guang】 , which is another name for Xin Metal Qi. With such a deep foundation, no wonder he was valued by the True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect..."

Meanwhile, the settlement content from the Book of a Hundred Lifetimes continued to appear.

【As a Celestial Spirit, you had great ambition. Unwilling to accept the limits of your strength, you pondered deeply and finally chose to reincarnate and join the Primordial Saint Sect.】

【You gained the favor of the True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect.】

【At the peak of Foundation Establishment, you finally reached the most critical step of your life—to ascend to the Golden Core. Succeed, and you transcend; fail, and you sink again.】

At this point, the data stream abruptly halted.

Perhaps because True Person Chong Guang had refined this strand of Metal Essence only up to this point, there was no further information.

Soon, all the data streams began to collapse and converge, until finally—

Golden brilliance burst forth!

'Wow! A golden legend!'

Lü Yang immediately perked up, staring intently at the information on the panel:

【You have obtained the Golden Talent · Innate Celestial Spirit.】

【Innate Celestial Spirit: When you restart and reincarnate, you can use this talent to change your foundation and designate yourself as a "Celestial Spirit" with an innate status.】

'A talent usable only during reincarnation...'

Lü Yang immediately realized how powerful this talent was.

A Celestial Spirit!

Blessed by heaven and earth, with maxed-out comprehension, talent, and fortune!

However, he quickly furrowed his brow.

'But it's not without drawbacks... Changing my foundation means I have to start over, doesn't it? And the starting location might be different if I become a Celestial Spirit?'

Currently, he only had two starting locations.

One was the day he first entered the Primordial Saint Sect.

The other was after Foundation Establishment on Mount Luofeng.

And this golden talent 【Innate Celestial Spirit】 , in a sense, provided him with a temporary starting point.

It could only be used once and could not be restarted again.

At first glance, it seemed not very useful.

However, Lü Yang saw the critical point: the ability to designate himself as a "Celestial Spirit" meant he might not start within the Primordial Saint Sect!

There was great potential to exploit this!

'After all, if I want to master the First-Grade True Qi in the future and walk the path of 【Emptiness Realization】 , I must seek wisdom from all schools and gather the strengths of many.'

But his current foundation was too rigid.

Starting directly as a disciple of the Saint Sect, with such a pure and legitimate background, only the Pure Land might be willing to accept him.

The Sword Pavilion and the Dao Court would definitely never accept him.

However, with 【Innate Celestial Spirit】 , everything would be different.

After all, being born of heaven and earth—who could have a purer background than a Celestial Spirit?

Overseas, the Sword Pavilion, the Dao Court—wherever he wanted to start, he could.

Then, he could return to the Saint Sect in a future restart without any karma attached!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang could not help but get excited.

However, at that moment—

"Boom!!!"

Suddenly, a thunderous roar exploded in the sky above.

It echoed not only in the mortal world but also spread within the Foundation Establishment Realm, carried by the mighty wind.

Immediately after, everyone heard a shrill, desperate, and indignant roar:

"No——!!!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,453 words]

At this moment, Jiangnan, Jiangbei, Jiangxi, and Jiangdong—all directions stirred!

"Who is it.?"

The first to stand up was True Lord Qingcheng Feixue.

Her beautiful eyes faintly glowed red, and her originally stable aura suddenly turned frenzied.

Almost at the same time, the other True Lords revealed expressions of surprise.

In the next second, within the Foundation Establishment Realm, in the present world, countless visions emerged, filling the skies with brilliance.

Foremost among them was the shadow of a towering tree that reached the heavens and pierced the earth.

【Everlasting Chuan Tree】 !

Ranked among the Heavenly Gang, formed from the Qi of Jia Wood, it was Yang Wood.

When its roots and branches were severed, it turned into Dead Wood.

Only after being nourished by the waters of rivers, ponds, and marshes could it form the foundation of eternal life and immortality!

Next, the towering tree shadow slightly trembled, and the tree crown scattered countless raindrops.

Each droplet seemed to carry the weight of a mountain as it fell into the vast land of Jiangbei.

Every drop merged into the earth, bringing with it heavy Yin Qi, integrating into the earth's veins and spreading in all directions.

It gathered to form the Qi of water and earth.

【Yin Dragon Water】 !

Ranked among the Earthly Fiends, formed from the Qi of Chen Earth, it was the world's most Yin-rich earth, yet it was the tomb and treasury of water.

Thus, though it was Earth Qi, it appeared as water to the world.

For a moment, countless Foundation Establishment Real Persons showed puzzled expressions.

"Has Senior Brother succeeded? His divine powers manifesting to announce it to the world?"

While True Person Yinshan was pondering, he turned to look at Hong Ju beside him.

However, he saw that Hong Ju had widened his eyes, his mouth slightly open, and his face was full of despair!

"No... this isn't right... why?"

Hong Ju murmured softly, a sense of unease crawling up his heart in an instant.

Because according to what he knew, if it had succeeded, there shouldn't have been such a huge commotion!

Success should have been like nourishing things silently, that was the sign of a successful ascension!

Now, such a grand scale, a manifestation that almost summoned the attention of the entire world, actually indicated that True Person Chong Guang had already lost control of his aura!

In the next moment, another vision emerged.

The towering **【Everlasting Chuan Tree】** suddenly burst into radiance, unexpectedly sprouting lush branches and leaves.

As the tree crown swayed, it erupted with boundless vitality.

【Dread of Chopping】

Ranked among the Heavenly Gang, formed from the Qi of Yi Wood.

Unlike Dead Wood, this was Living Wood, Yin Wood, perfectly complementing the Yang Wood of Jia.

And above the tree crown, the figure of True Person Chong Guang appeared.

However, he did not look at anything else but stared blankly at the **【Overturning Lamp Flame】** above his head, as if deep in thought.

While he was contemplating, a starlight glowed in his palm and then transformed into a sun disk!

【Rigid Flame Furnace!】

Ranked among the Earthly Fiends, formed from the Qi of Si Fire, it was the fire of furnaces and smelting, a Yin Fire.

At this moment, it was held in the palm of True Person Chong Guang, radiating countless beams of light!

At this moment, all four of True Person Chong Guang's innate divine powers manifested fully!

Immediately after, the four divine power visions began to collapse with a roar, all converging into True Person Chong Guang's palm, finally imprinting onto an ancient scroll.

This scroll seemed to melt completely, containing countless scenes—mountains, rivers, sun, moon, palaces—all outlined by densely packed tadpole-like runes.

At first glance, it looked like just a painting, but upon closer inspection, one could perceive the profound truths of the Dao within, each word a precious gem.

Innate Divine Power, **【Bright Flying Scenery Scroll】** !

The four innate divine powers completed his innate divine power, merging with his Dao Foundation, forming the **【Dongyang Blessed Land】** .

Everything proceeded smoothly without any flaw.

But why?

In the next second, blood tears flowed from True Person Chong Guang's eyes: "Why can't I succeed? Why does the **【Overturning Lamp Flame】** reject me!?"

Time seemed to freeze at this moment.

Looking across the world, apart from the True Lords, all the Foundation Establishment Real Persons who had reached perfection already reacted, sighing with a touch of desolation and helplessness.

"Failed."

In the next moment, True Person Yinshan looked in horror at Hong Ju beside him.

He saw this Foundation Establishment Perfected Real Person shaking his head, a bitter smile appearing at the corner of his mouth.

"How bitter..."

As soon as the words fell, a loud bang sounded, and his Dharma body exploded, turning into a sky full of brilliance.

His cultivation, like a castle in the air, vanished in an instant!

At the same time, all cultivators in the world whose Dao Foundations and cultivation methods were related to the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 felt a response.

Those with high cultivation felt as if they had been struck hard, coughing up several mouthfuls of blood.

Those with lower cultivation went into Qi deviation on the spot and would be unable to recover for days, each one looking toward the sky in shock.

Then they heard a long sigh.

In the sky, the light and shadow formed by True Person Chong Guang shook his head, his eyes showing a bit of realization and unwillingness.

His lips moved, letting out a hoarse roar:

"Not my fault! Not my fault...!!!"

Before the words fell, his figure dissipated.

"Boom!"

The exploding brilliance instantly filled the sky.

The 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 once again disappeared without a trace.

In the Foundation Establishment Realm, a burning sun disk fell with a roar!

"Blessed Land collapsed!"

Because he had personally witnessed the fall of a True Lord's Cave Heaven before, Lü Yang saw everything clearly at this moment.

This was not fake, nor was it a deliberate trap.

It was a real failure!

He failed to refine the Golden Core, and the Blessed Land collapsed, affecting all cultivators related to the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 .

Although not as earth-shattering as the fall of a True Lord, it was still shocking enough.

However, Lü Yang could not figure it out... how could it have failed?

True Person Chong Guang's preparations had been flawless, and no one had even tried to stop him.

One must know that he had True Lord Qingcheng Feixue personally overseeing the process.

A mid-stage Golden Core True Lord, carrying the momentum of having slain another True Lord, and with no more rivals like Daoist Hong Yun vying for the position.

He had favorable timing, location, and people, everything had been calculated perfectly.

In Qi Refining terms, this was the foundation of a perfect Foundation Establishment.

How could it have failed?

However, he had no time to think further, because in the Foundation Establishment Realm, with the collapse of the Blessed Land, that sun disk was getting closer and closer, showing signs even in the present world.

At a glance, it was clearly an arc of light.

The light was illusory, reflecting countless jade towers, trees, rain, furnaces... all the divine power visions that True Person Chong Guang had previously displayed.

【Dongyang Blessed Land】 !

In an instant, countless Foundation Establishment Real Persons fixed their gazes on it.

After all, this 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 gathered all of True Person Chong Guang's lifelong treasures and insights.

For Foundation Establishment Real Persons, it was an incredible opportunity!

When a whale falls, all things thrive!

At the same time, True Lords from all sides projected their divine senses toward the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 .

"Xue Feihong, this time you can't stop us. Since Chong Guang has failed, the Blessed Land he left behind should be divided as we agreed."

"Indeed, failed to refine the Golden Core, the various families shall share it!"

Above the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, True Lord Qingcheng Feixue showed none of the anger others expected.

She only said calmly, "Very well. Then let all families rely on their own abilities."

She was a madwoman, but not a fool.

For the sake of Chong Guang's Golden Core refinement, she had formed alliances to gain the support of the Holy Sect, withstanding the pressure from the other three factions.

However, now that Chong Guang had failed.

A dead man was naturally not worth the Holy Sect wasting any more effort on.

Although the Holy Sect was powerful, it could not fight all three factions alone, let alone do so for a Blessed Land left behind by a dead man.

So even with True Lord Qingcheng Feixue's dominance, she had no choice but to compromise at this moment.

"However... no Perfected Real Persons are allowed. Only mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators may enter."

As her words fell, the True Lords from all sides looked at each other.

However, since Qingcheng Feixue was a mid-stage Golden Core True Lord, although she compromised, she still held some authority.

They did not want to completely enrage this madwoman either.

Thinking of this, the True Lords all nodded.

"Agreed!"

In the next moment, Lü Yang heard a cold voice in his ear, like the calm before a storm:

"Enter the Blessed Land. I must know the reason for the failure."

A thorough investigation!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 229: The Dao Companion of True Person Chong Guang?

[1,504 words]

The ruins of the capital city of the Kingdom of Qing.

Lü Yang stood in a place amidst the clouds and sky, quietly gazing at the firmament.

Since True Person Chong Guang ascended in pursuit of gold and used the entire 【Kingdom of Qing】 as a sacrificial offering, this place had long since lost its former vitality and had become a land of deathly silence.

Adding to that, with True Person Chong Guang's failure in seeking gold, the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 was currently falling toward this place in the mortal world.

Although it had not yet fully manifested, even the slightest signs already brought scorching winds and radiant light carrying immense destructive power.

Mortals who approached would instantly turn to ashes.

Even cultivators in the early and middle stages of Qi Refining found it hard to get close.

Only cultivators at the late stage of Qi Refining could briefly remain under such radiance.

Only those at the peak of Qi Refining with established ranks could ignore the influence of this place.

And as time passed, this influence continued to intensify.

According to Lü Yang's estimation, once the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 truly descended into the mortal world, even peak Qi Refining cultivators would likely be unable to approach this place.

“Yuan Tu.”

At that moment, a shadow with a gloomy expression rode a stream of light and swiftly approached—it was True Person Yinshan, though his expression looked rather unpleasant.

Seeing this, Lü Yang sighed softly, “Senior Brother, you are struggling as well.”

As soon as these words fell, they stirred True Person Yinshan’s emotions, making him sigh deeply as he clasped his hands and said, “I’ll be counting on you in the future, Junior Brother.”

After speaking, a dark and ruthless glint flashed in his eyes.

“This is the only chance for the two of us.”

“We must seize it.”

“Otherwise, we will fade into obscurity and never regain our former glory.”

“You should know that many True Persons in the Primordial Saint Sect have their eyes on our positions.”

True Person Yinshan understood the situation very well.

With True Person Chong Guang’s failure in seeking gold, they had lost this powerful backer at the peak of Foundation Establishment.

Though their status in the Primordial Saint Sect had not completely collapsed...

It was certainly no longer as prestigious as before.

Thus, they had to find a new backer.

Gaining the favor of True Lord Qing Cheng Fei Xue was of utmost importance to both of them.

And to gain the True Lord’s favor, they had to demonstrate their capabilities.

That said, True Person Yinshan’s expression was still far from optimistic, as this time they were not facing a mere Foundation Establishment True Person of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

“The True Lord has decreed that the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 shall be divided among all parties.”

“This is a rare and great opportunity.”

“In the past, even major True Persons would come for such an event.”

“Even with the True Lord’s restrictions, it won’t be easy to deal with.”

Just then, as True Person Yinshan’s gaze shifted, he saw a stream of light suddenly rise from the distant horizon.

Wherever it passed, spiritual tides surged.

As it drew near, it split into two streams, one still and one moving.

Surprisingly, they were a middle-aged man dressed in official robes and a handsome, well-armed young man.

As soon as the two appeared, they resonated with heaven and earth.

Above their heads, talismanic symbols shaped like tadpoles intertwined and finally transformed into two extremely striking, radiant official ranks that filled the sky.

Seeing this, True Person Yinshan’s gaze immediately sharpened:

“【Commander of the Dutian Department】 Hou Lan, and 【Minister of the Tongzheng Department】 Cheng Tinggui.”

True Person Yinshan spoke in a low voice, “Both hold official ranks of the third grade, equivalent to mid-to-late stage Foundation Establishment.”

“Though individually weaker than the other parties.”

“Dao Court and Pure Land have always colluded shamelessly and are known for teaming up against enemies.”

“With one in civil affairs and the other in martial arts, these two are likely well-versed in joint techniques—do not underestimate them.”

“Understood, Senior Brother.”

Lü Yang nodded, then looked in another direction.

There, the clouds parted and revealed a scene of an illusory Buddhist temple forest.

“Pure Land.”

In the next second, several figures emerged from the temple forest.

The leader pressed his palms together, wearing a smile on his face.

He was clad in a luxurious kasaya inlaid with gold and jade, and the prayer beads in his hands were plump, radiating a warm jade-like glow.

The moment he appeared, his gaze locked straight onto Lü Yang.

“Who is that?”

Lü Yang, having insufficient experience, only recognized that the man was a mid-to-late stage Foundation Establishment Arhat but did not know his background.

He could only listen as True Person Yinshan explained:

“That should be 【Hui Ku】 .”

“He is a disciple of 【Bodhisattva Long She Pan Ying】 and is from the same lineage as Vimalakirti Venerable who previously attacked us.”

“But Vimalakirti Venerable has been beaten back to Pure Land, leaving his temple vacant.”

“This Hui Ku likely intends to take his place.”

“I see.” Lü Yang immediately understood.

No wonder Hui Ku was looking at him like that—he was aiming to rise in rank.

After all, everyone knew that Lü Yang was now the most coveted prize that Pure Land could not obtain.

“However, the real threat has yet to arrive.”

Neither Dao Court nor Pure Land was worth mentioning.

Not to Lü Yang, and not even to True Person Yinshan, who only felt slightly more cautious but did not regard them as their greatest enemy.

For the Primordial Saint Sect, there was only one true adversary.

“Clang clang!”

At that moment, a sharp sword hum suddenly echoed from the south.

It pierced gold and split stone, shooting straight into the clouds, instantly stirring the response of countless sword artifacts.

Seeing this, True Person Yinshan’s expression grew much more serious:

“Sword intent... that lunatic from the south has arrived.”

Lü Yang opened his third-eye spiritual vision at his brow, operating the Divination Instrument, casting a beam of Bing Fire light to clearly see the tall figure obscured by layers of sword light.

The figure stood with hands clasped behind his back, robes fluttering.

Above his head, a Sword Pill radiated the brilliance of sun and moon, continuously emitting sword qi.

Simply standing in the air, he seemed like a peerless killing sword.

Just like Hui Ku from Pure Land, the moment he appeared, his gaze locked directly onto Lü Yang.

But the Sword Pavilion was much more straightforward than Pure Land.

“Whoosh!”

In the instant their gazes met, a glaring sword edge had already slashed toward Lü Yang’s face, bringing with it bone-piercing coldness that reached between his brows.

Sure enough, a lunatic.

Lü Yang cursed inwardly but did not hesitate in the slightest.

The 【Hundred-Forge Danger-Subduing Black Cloak】 on his body fluttered, immediately blocking the incoming sword edge.

“Xing Feng’s spiritual treasure?”

Seeing this, the figure from the Sword Pavilion let out a muffled snort, his tone filled with fury.

The sword edge he had slashed suddenly burst into countless brilliant lights, each carrying lethal power.

They fell upon the 【Hundred-Forge Danger-Subduing Black Cloak】 and almost instantly broke through the treasure’s defense!

After all, this spiritual treasure originated from the Sword Pavilion.

Who else would understand its weaknesses better than the Sword Pavilion itself?

Even so, it still bought Lü Yang some time.

In just the blink of an eye, the light of 【Differentiating Intimacy and Distance】 had already fallen upon the opponent.

“Rustle rustle!”

The next second, the figure from the Sword Pavilion was pushed back a thousand meters, causing her to frown deeply.

However, she did not attack again but instead dispersed the sword light surrounding her body.

Looking over, it was actually a dignified woman.

At a glance, she appeared to be no more than seventeen or eighteen years old, with bright eyes and white teeth, curved brows and a delicate forehead, and skin as white as jade.

She wore a green palace dress covered by a wide-sleeved gauze robe.

Seeing this, Lü Yang probed, “Someone from the Ye family?”

“Sword Pavilion, Ye Guyue.”

The valiant female sword cultivator sneered coldly, her expression as sharp as an unsheathed sword.

Her sword qi and killing intent were completely unrestrained, seemingly ready to attack Lü Yang again.

Seeing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes as well.

For a moment, the atmosphere grew tense, ready to explode.

However, at that moment...

A sound, like a mixture of zither, flute, and pipe, indescribable and ethereal, suddenly drifted from afar.

It dissolved the killing intent and instantly calmed the tense situation.

Immediately after, a graceful figure appeared in the distance.

She wore her hair in a celestial bun, with features as delicate as a painting.

Her appearance was exceptional, yet unlike the female sword cultivator.

She was dressed in plain white mourning attire, her demeanor as serene as an orchid in a secluded valley.

“Who is that?” Lü Yang asked curiously.

“She is from our Primordial Saint Sect.”

On the other side, True Person Yinshan lowered his voice and replied, “She is Senior Brother’s Dao companion. Now that Senior Brother has died, she naturally came here.”

True Person Chong Guang’s wife?

Lü Yang was taken aback and suddenly recalled:

True Person Chong Guang had a son!

He had even encountered him on the Dao Seizing Battlefield before, named Chong Ming.

In that case, it was not surprising for him to have a Dao companion.

In the next second, Lü Yang noticed that she too had turned her beautiful eyes toward him, staring intently.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 230: Do You Really Take Me for a Lustful Ghost?

[1,518 words]

One had to admit, though both were Dao Companions of True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect, the wife of True Person Chong Guang was far superior to Madam Ruo Xiang.

Her entire body’s aura and divine abilities were far beyond comparison.

Although she wore plain mourning robes in white, appearing serene and modest, they failed to conceal her natural beauty.

On the contrary, they made her appear even more dignified.

However, what was even more attention-grabbing than her appearance was the radiance of two divine abilities emanating from her body, making people unable to help but sink into them.

Lü Yang narrowed his eyes slightly upon seeing this.

‘Two innate divine abilities, Foundation Establishment mid-stage perfection?’

The next moment, she looked toward the direction of Ye Guyue and spoke in a cold tone, “The 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 has not yet opened. Stirring up trouble now would violate the decree of the True Lord.”

“This little sister, why not settle your grievances after entering the Blessed Land?”

Though her words sounded polite, her aura did not yield in the slightest.

It was clear that if Ye Guyue insisted on acting recklessly, she would have to face both her and Lü Yang’s joint suppression.

“...Very well.”

After a moment of silence, Ye Guyue looked toward Lü Yang.

“In the Blessed Land, you and I shall settle our score, and determine life and death!”

Leaving behind this statement, Ye Guyue immediately withdrew her sword light and landed steadily to the south, leaving behind only a lingering sword intent that locked onto Lü Yang from afar.

At the same time, the woman rode her escape light to arrive before Lü Yang and True Person Yinshan, curtsying as she spoke, “This humble one, Miaoyin, greets the two Dao Friends.”

“Not at all, Madam, you are too polite.”

Without hesitation, Lü Yang cupped his hands in return, not only because of her status as the Dao Companion of True Person Chong Guang, but also because her cultivation warranted their courtesy.

The next moment, someone else stepped out from behind her.

This person carried an air of nobility, but at this moment seemed somewhat dispirited, with reddened eyes, and spoke in a low voice, “Uncle-Master Yinshan... Is my father really dead?”

Lü Yang looked over and immediately recognized him.

Chong Ming, the son of Chong Guang!

Decades had passed, and this former most prestigious second-generation disciple of the sect had actually established his Dao Foundation.

Although he was still at the early stage, he was no longer merely considered a Talent.

Facing Chong Ming's question, True Person Yinshan could not help but sigh deeply and replied helplessly, "There may still be hope. Senior Brother has always been meticulous and never left anything to chance. Even though he was full of confidence in seeking the Golden Core this time, he must have left a backup plan in case of failure. That is why we intend to explore the Blessed Land and find out."

Upon hearing this, Chong Ming's eyes immediately brightened.

"Uncle-Master is right!"

Then Chong Ming gritted his teeth and muttered in a low voice, "Disasters linger for a thousand years. How could that old man perish so easily!"

Lü Yang watched with some surprise.

This behavior... Why did it feel so different from the harmonious family on Mending Heaven Peak?

Was this truly fatherly kindness and filial piety?

The more he watched, the more it felt off!

Thinking of this, he glanced at Chong Ming again.

Could it be that you are Chong Guang's backup plan?

"Dao Friend Yuan Tu."

At this moment, Miaoyin True Person suddenly turned to Lü Yang and spoke softly, "Could you spare me a moment? There are some matters I wish to discuss with you in detail."

"Mother?"

Chong Ming looked surprised, clearly unaware of this in advance.

However, Miaoyin True Person simply waved her hand.

"You go catch up with Dao Friend Yinshan first."

“Dao Friend Yuan Tu, come with me over there.”

After speaking, she floated away first.

Though Lü Yang felt somewhat suspicious in his heart, he could only cup his hands and follow closely behind Miaoyin True Person.

The next moment, Miaoyin True Person took out a cloud-like veil from her sleeve, and with a flick, a brilliant light unfolded, completely isolating the two of them from the outside world.

It turned out to be a high-grade spiritual treasure.

Lü Yang tried probing it slightly and discovered that even with his Heaven-Exploring Instrument, it felt somewhat strenuous to detect through it.

Why so secretive? What did she want to do?

Lü Yang frowned, only to see Miaoyin True Person turn around and speak solemnly, “Dao Friend Yuan Tu, I know you were the one my husband trusted the most before his passing.”

“Madam is joking.”

Lü Yang waved his hand.

“Senior Brother Yinshan is Uncle-Master Chong Guang’s true confidant. I am merely a junior who joined later. How could I be worthy of being called the most trusted?”

“Yinshan is not suitable.”

Miaoyin True Person shook her head.

“His cultivation is lacking, and his strength is inferior to yours. More importantly... my husband’s Immortal Spirit Body is not in his hands.”

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang narrowed his eyes.

Immortal Spirit Body?

Could it be the Metal Qi of Xin that he had obtained from True Person Shang Xuan?

Without pausing, Miaoyin True Person continued, “I am ten percent certain. Though my husband may be on the verge of death, he is definitely not truly dead yet!”

Chong Guang True Person is not dead?

Lü Yang's expression remained calm upon hearing this, showing no sign of surprise.

Miaoyin True Person, however, seemed a little taken aback.

"...Dao Friend Yuan Tu, are you not the least bit curious?"

"It is within expectations."

Lü Yang smiled.

"If he had died from failing to seek the Golden Core, a Dao Calamity would have arisen, something that only a Foundation Establishment cultivator at perfection could counter. Yet, the True Lord only allowed mid-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators to enter the Blessed Land and tasked me with uncovering the truth of Uncle-Master's failure. Obviously, the Dao Calamity has yet to arise, making it easy to deduce that Uncle-Master has not completely perished."

As his voice fell, Miaoyin True Person bit her red lips gently.

"...As expected of your reputation. Dao Friend Yuan Tu, your meticulous thinking is indeed remarkable. No wonder my husband praised you as the future pillar of the sect. Entrusting this matter to you puts my mind at ease."

Spare me the flattery! I haven't even agreed yet!

Lü Yang smiled without replying.

Miaoyin True Person then shifted the topic, "To be frank, my constitution is rather special. Ancient records call it the Heavenly Melody Body."

"Anyone who dual cultivates with a woman of this physique can cultivate a Dao Art called **【Seven Emotions Heart Refining Curse】** ."

Saying this, Miaoyin True Person spoke as if it were perfectly natural, composed and dignified.

"This technique is known as **【Affectionate yet Ruthless Dao】** . It refines the heart with the seven emotions, and when perfected, it reaches the state of **【Better to Forget Each Other Than to Struggle Together in the Mortal World】** ."

"In the past, my husband married me as his Dao Companion precisely to cultivate this technique."

"According to him, once this technique is mastered, coupled with his innate Immortal Spirit foundation, even if he failed in seeking the Golden Core, he could transform into the spirit of the Blessed Land itself."

“In that case, as long as we retrieve the former Immortal Spirit Body, even if he can no longer seek the Golden Core, he could at least return as a perfected Foundation Establishment cultivator. Thus, both I and you, Dao Friend Yuan Tu, are the backups my husband left to preserve a sliver of life in case of failure.”

Hearing this, Lü Yang finally showed a surprised expression.

At the same time, he marveled inwardly at Chong Guang True Person’s thorough planning.

Failing to seek the Golden Core should have been certain death, yet he had managed to find a way to survive.

“...I understand now.”

Lü Yang nodded.

“Madam means to have me use the Immortal Spirit Body in my possession to summon Uncle-Master Chong Guang, in hopes of finding a turning point?”

“Exactly.”

Miaoyin True Person nodded.

Hearing this, Lü Yang’s expression turned serious.

“Madam, rest assured. I have received great kindness from Uncle-Master. How could I stand by and do nothing?”

“However... I have my difficulties as well.”

“That Metal Qi of Xin is the most precious thing I possess. If I use it to summon Uncle-Master, I gain nothing in return. This puts me in a difficult position.”

The implied meaning was clear—what would be his reward?

Madam, you wouldn’t want Uncle-Master Chong Guang to have no chance of returning either, would you?

Miaoyin True Person showed no change in expression, clearly understanding the sect’s longstanding tradition of not acting without seeing tangible benefits.

“...What does Dao Friend Yuan Tu desire?”

As she spoke, Miaoyin True Person raised her head, her clear and beautiful eyes revealing a trace of helplessness, and her delicate face showing a hint of vulnerability.

Yet the next moment, Lü Yang actually took a step back, deliberately widening the distance between them.

What a joke!

Did she really take him for a lustful ghost?

Lü Yang sneered and said, "I want a first-grade True Art of the sect! That is the true inheritance of the sect. I wonder if Madam happens to possess one?"

"..."

Upon hearing this, Miaoyin True Person, who had just seemed weak and easy to push over, immediately narrowed her eyes and returned to her usual demeanor.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 231: Evil Thoughts Arise, Ting You Emerges from Seclusion!

[1,531 words]

This time, nothing happened, and Lü Yang directly walked out.

'Are you kidding me? You think you can settle such a big matter with just one day of service as payment? Do you really think I'm such an easy fool? What I want is real, tangible benefits!'

Moreover, Lü Yang suspected there was a scheme involved in this.

The words of True Person Miaoyin could not be fully trusted.

After all, according to her, she only wanted to save Chong Guang, but in the Primordial Saint Sect, she spoke to him about deep marital affection?

'Who is she trying to fool!'

Especially after seeing Chong Ming, Lü Yang's doubts deepened.

Although Chong Ming had also reached the Foundation Establishment Realm, it was only the early stage.

And among those who came this time, which one wasn't at least in the mid-stage?

Early Foundation Establishment was no different from a burden.

She brought a burden along, who was even Chong Guang's son.

Though the public explanation sounded nice, Lü Yang simply did not believe there was no issue.

This was all a trap, and it involved Chong Guang, who had reached the peak of Foundation Establishment.

Lü Yang did not want to fall for their tricks again.

What's more, this time, he was the one holding the initiative.

Thinking of his next lifetime, he naturally wanted to maximize his benefits, which was why he demanded a first-grade true cultivation technique.

However, True Person Miaoyin was powerless regarding this.

Because according to her, she had never even seen a first-grade true cultivation technique from the Primordial Saint Sect.

If she hadn't seen it, how could she possibly give it to him?

However, Chong Guang had once served as the acting Sect Master of the Primordial Saint Sect.

When all the True Persons went into seclusion, he managed all affairs single-handedly, wielding overwhelming authority.

And as his Dao companion, True Person Miaoyin naturally held significant status in the sect back then.

Even if she casually withheld a little, it was enough to make Lü Yang's heart move.

Thus, after several rounds of negotiation, she finally presented a reward that satisfied Lü Yang: a secret second-grade true cultivation technique from the Primordial Saint Sect.

"Its name is—— 『Heavenly Origin Supreme Commanding Divine Law』 !"

Lü Yang examined the contents of the technique within his Sea of Consciousness.

"Unfortunately, it is only a fragmented part. She said that after I rescue True Person Chong Guang, she would hand over the rest."

Though she said that, even the fragment was enough to glimpse the bigger picture.

"If judging solely from the fragment, the second-grade true Qi cultivated from this technique is indeed comparable to the combined-path cultivators of the Biyang Cultivation World."

This indirectly confirmed the feasibility of the first-grade true Qi of the Great Ascension Realm.

However, what intrigued Lü Yang was that this second-grade true cultivation technique had an extra step before building the Dao foundation.

Its name was 【Absorbing External Qi to Refine the Spirit】 .

'What is External Qi?'

Just as Lü Yang wanted to continue reading, he found that there was nothing further.

Lü Yang frowned deeply and cursed under his breath.

This was definitely True Person Miaoyin's deliberate move, cutting it off right here to make him unable to let go of the remaining part.

'Wretched woman!'

At this thought, evil intentions arose in Lü Yang's heart.

True Person Miaoyin's request clearly had issues.

Lü Yang did not want to be schemed against, but he also desired the second-grade true cultivation technique.

This put him in a difficult position.

'How about finding an opportunity after entering the blessed land, directly ambush this woman, and use dual cultivation techniques to extract the rest of the technique from her? I could also cultivate the 【Heart-Refining Curse of the Seven Emotions】 she mentioned earlier, killing two birds with one stone! It's far easier than risking everything to help True Person Chong Guang return.'

As for the so-called favor owed to True Person Chong Guang?

'Forget it!'

'We're both True Persons of the Primordial Saint Sect.'

'You used me as a scapegoat, shifting the heavenly punishment onto me. I haven't even settled that score with you yet, so let me take a little interest from your Dao companion first!'

Thinking of this, Lü Yang couldn't help but squint his eyes.

'However, in the struggle within the blessed land, the True Person would surely be watching.'

'Though killing True Person Miaoyin isn't impossible, I must first complete the True Person's assigned task.'

'Find out the reason for Chong Guang's failure!'

From this perspective, he might have to meet the possibly still-living True Person Chong Guang.

That was simple.

After Chong Guang failed to seek gold this time, he had already lost all value in the eyes of the True Person.

Without the True Person's protection and reduced to a remnant soul, Lü Yang had no less than nine ways to control him!

"Boom!"

At that moment, a loud explosion rang out.

The brilliance between heaven and earth reached an extreme, as if a sun had truly fallen here.

"The 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 is about to emerge!"

"From its descent into the world to its collapse and return to the earth and heavens will take about one or two hours. Let's take this opportunity to loot it thoroughly!"

In an instant, the earth of the former Kingdom of Qing shook.

Countless magnificent lights intertwined, forming palatial towers and jade buildings.

All the True Persons revealed fervent expressions.

In the next second, beams of light shot into the sky.

Lü Yang, however, was in no hurry.

He slowly selected a middle position and entered.

This way, if something went wrong ahead, he could retreat immediately.

Yet, he wouldn't lag too far behind, ending up watching others feast while he drank only soup.

Mountains spread out endlessly, with the morning sun hanging high in the sky.

Lü Yang stepped out from a patch of heavenly light.

Glancing around, a hint of emotion appeared on his face.

'What a grand banquet this is.'

With Chong Guang dead, all cultivators feasted on him.

Even the Primordial Saint Sect was no exception.

Making use of everyone's talents.

Since he failed in seeking gold, all previous investments were wasted.

Naturally, they had to find a way to recoup their losses.

Lü Yang raised his hand.

Out of caution, he did not choose to absorb and refine the spiritual Qi.

This place was the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 left behind by Chong Guang.

The so-called heaven and earth spiritual Qi here was, in essence, Chong Guang's mana.

He couldn't recklessly absorb it into his body, especially since Chong Guang seemed not to be completely dead yet.

"This spiritual Qi... is poisonous."

This feeling was somewhat similar to when he entered the small realm sky during the Dao Seizing Battle.

Except the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 was of much higher quality than that one.

"The most valuable things in a blessed land are undoubtedly the innate divine abilities of its master when they were alive."

And in this 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 , without a doubt, those were True Person Chong Guang's 【Everlasting Tree】 , 【Dragon-Shading Water】 , 【Fear of Felling】 , and 【Blazing Furnace】 !

Innate divine abilities would solidify after the blessed land collapsed.

If left unattended, they would return to the earth and heavens with the collapse of the blessed land.

But if extracted before that, they would become top-grade spiritual embryos.

If merged into one's spiritual treasures, they could at least add one or two mysterious powers.

If used to forge a brand new spiritual treasure, it would undoubtedly be a top-grade product among superior treasures.

They could even be used in pill refinement to assist in boosting cultivation.

In short, they were of infinite use.

"Perfect, my Abyss Sword still lacks a final touch."

The spiritual will of Vimalakirti Venerable that he had previously fished out had already been used up.

Unfortunately, it was merely a spiritual will, not enough to trigger a qualitative transformation in the Abyss Sword.

It was like three innate divine abilities being a threshold for a Great True Person.

The same was true for top-grade spiritual treasures—three mysterious powers marked a threshold.

Crossing it would mean a complete transformation.

Thus, if he could obtain a spiritual embryo formed from one of True Person Chong Guang's innate divine abilities and fuse it into the Abyss Sword, his combat strength would undoubtedly leap forward.

'By then, perhaps I could even find a way to ambush and kill True Person Miaoyin.'

After all, the second-grade true cultivation technique she held, 『Heavenly Origin Supreme Commanding Divine Law』 , concerned his future path.

Lü Yang was determined to obtain it!

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately calculated with his fingers.

The Heaven-Seeking Instrument operated, and the light of Bing Fire shone throughout the six directions.

Soon, it locked onto one of the innate divine abilities within the blessed land.

Looking into the distance, it turned out to be a vast marsh.

"That's...the 【Dragon-Shading Water】 ?"

It belonged to the Earthly Fiend 【Zhixu】 , the most Yin and gentle soil in the world.

Because it interacted with the Heavenly Gang 【Gui Water】 , this innate divine ability was born.

Though it was earth Qi, it appeared as water.

It was the same as the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 Lü Yang had obtained before.

That too belonged to 【Zhixu】 , but it was born from the interaction with the Heavenly Gang 【Ji Earth】 .

".Hmm?"

At this thought, Lü Yang suddenly sensed a slight disharmony.

Something felt... off.

At that moment, the Myriad Spirits Banner suddenly trembled.

Lü Yang swept it with his divine sense and immediately showed a look of joy.

It was the long-silent Ancestor Ting You emerging from seclusion!

Could it be that he had achieved results in comprehending first-grade true Qi?

Perfect timing, as Lü Yang now had many doubts that needed the help of his unparalleled wisdom to resolve!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 232: The Secret of Empty Certification, The Mystery of Failure

[1,518 words]

"Rustle rustle!"

As the Myriad Spirit Banner fluttered, a light and shadow slowly emerged.

Seeing this, Lü Yang hurriedly stepped forward and saluted, saying, "Junior disciple Lü Yang greets Ancestor!"

".No need for that."

Master Tingyou slightly narrowed his eyes and then smiled, saying, "I have finished sorting out the memory of that Dao Calamity and the theory of the Grand Completion First-Grade True Qi."

Strictly speaking, he was now the Banner Spirit of the Myriad Spirit Banner, while Lü Yang was the Banner Master.

He had no way to resist Lü Yang, but Lü Yang still treated him with the courtesy due to an ancestor, which he quite enjoyed.

He felt that it had been worth going into seclusion for Lü Yang this time.

Thinking of this, Master Tingyou immediately separated a strand of divine sense.

Lü Yang took out a jade slip, infused it with the divine sense, and circulated his mana for a moment before beginning to check.

What he saw was a large expanse of scriptures.

Its name was— 『Innate Golden Palace Jade Book』 !

Could it really be that my unparalleled wisdom had comprehended it?

Lü Yang revealed a look of surprise and immediately scanned it with his divine sense, then froze.

The good news was that Master Tingyou had indeed comprehended something.

The bad news was that what he had comprehended was not much.

"According to my deduction, if one refines Qi using the Innate True Person's method, the resulting True Qi is indeed perfect, worthy of being called the best in the world."

This was not surprising.

After all, the Innate True Person's idea was truly insane—refining Qi using the metal attribute!

This was equivalent to doing something that should only be done after completing Foundation Establishment at the Qi Refining stage.

Naturally, the True Qi refined through this method would completely surpass other forms of True Qi, leaving no comparison.

"However... that is all."

At this point, Master Tingyou shook his head and said, "The quality of the True Qi is beyond doubt, but again, it lacks 'position' (status or rank)."

Position was the true key to cultivation!

Refining Qi to ascend to Foundation Establishment, advancing from Foundation Establishment to Fruition—without elevating position, no matter how much the quality or quantity improved, it was meaningless to those at higher realms.

"In terms of True Qi quality, the Grand Completion First-Grade True Qi envisioned by the Innate True Person is absolutely perfect."

"At the same cultivation level, a cultivator who achieves this True Qi would have mana at least ten thousand times that of someone with Third-Grade True Qi!"

"With just a breath, one could crush the opponent, seemingly no different from a Foundation Establishment cultivator."

"However, this is just an illusion."

"If they truly fought, even the weakest Foundation Establishment True Person, not necessarily someone who had perfected Foundation Establishment, could easily crush you with a single finger."

Hearing this, Lü Yang asked, "Then how should one establish Foundation with Grand Completion First-Grade True Qi?"

"I don't know."

Master Tingyou fell silent for a moment before shaking his head, "The Innate True Person proposed a method of establishing Foundation with metal nature, but I confirmed through deduction that it is not viable."

"There seems to be something missing."

"But I don't know what it is."

"After all, to this day, I have only come into contact with Third-Grade cultivation methods."

"I have never even seen what a Second-Grade True Method looks like..."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang immediately slapped his forehead.

Then, circulating his divine sense, he retrieved the fragment of the Second-Grade True Method he had extorted from Master Miaoyin, 『Universal Divine Method of Qiantian One Origin Governing All Heavens』 .

"Ancestor, I recently obtained this."

"Please see if it might give you some inspiration?"

".Oh?"

Master Tingyou was momentarily stunned upon seeing this.

He took the cultivation method and glanced at it.

His expression immediately froze, and his previous casual demeanor gradually turned serious.

After a long while, he let out a deep breath:

"Refining the spirit by drawing external Qi... So that's how it is! So that's how it is!"

"External Qi, yes, it should be external Qi!"

"Since nothing can be sought inward, naturally, one must seek outward!"

An expression of sudden realization appeared on Master Tingyou's face.

He then looked at Lü Yang and said solemnly, "By any means necessary, you must obtain the Qi Drawing Secret Method of this Second-Grade True Method. This is the most crucial part!"

Lü Yang looked curious, "Qi Drawing Secret Method?"

"Exactly!" Master Tingyou nodded and explained, "I am certain that this is the greatest advantage that Second-Grade and First-Grade True Methods have over Third-Grade methods!"

"The Innate True Person failed to deduce this, likely because he never saw a true Second-Grade True Method."

"One sentence of true inheritance surpasses ten thousand volumes of books!"

"He was missing just that one sentence!"

"This person's talent was indeed unparalleled, not inferior to mine."

"Unfortunately, like me, he was born at the wrong time..."

Master Tingyou sighed for a moment, then looked at Lü Yang again:

"The so-called 'Refining the spirit by drawing external Qi' refers not to ordinary Qi, but to Qi from beyond the heavens! From outside the world!"

"What must be drawn is the Qi of the outer heavens!"

"Drawing the Qi of the outer heavens to nourish and refine the soul."

"Only by completing this step does the refined True Qi gain a specific direction—not toward Fruition, but toward the realm where the drawn Qi resides!"

Master Tingyou's thoughts grew increasingly clear, and his voice grew more urgent:

"By using the drawn outer heavenly Qi, you can attract the corresponding Fruition position located in another heavenly realm, one not of this world, and manifest it here."

"This is the so-called 'Empty Certification'!"

"Otherwise, if all you draw comes from this heaven and earth, how could you possibly certify a Fruition position that does not exist in this heaven and earth?"

Rumble!

As his words fell, a thunderclap streaked across the sky.

It seemed like nothing more than the result of colliding clouds, yet also seemed like a warning issued by heaven and earth!

Master Tingyou immediately fell silent.

After a long while, he sighed and said, "This is why Second-Grade and First-Grade True Methods are so rare and almost unknown."

"Because heavenly realms are not easy to find."

"Not those small realms, but true heavenly realms with mighty beings in residence and Dao laws manifest in the world!"

Such heavenly realms could not be casually captured by Golden Core True Lords.

If one truly encountered such a realm, it would inevitably lead to a prolonged war!

Battles lasting a hundred or even a thousand years were normal.

Even True Lords could fall!

"So that's how it is..."

With Master Tingyou's explanation, Lü Yang's eyes flickered with determination.

He had already made up his mind to make Master Miaoyin his top priority this time!

At all costs!

Even if he had to postpone the True Lord's mission, he must find a way to eliminate her and obtain the complete 『Universal Divine Method of Qiantian One Origin Governing All Heavens』 !

"Speaking of which, this place..."

Latest novel released at 69shu8.com first!

At that moment, Master Tingyou looked around and revealed a look of amazement, "A collapsing blessed land... Did Chong Guang fail?"

"Ancestor, your insight is unparalleled."

Lü Yang looked impressed, then tentatively asked, "Before his death, True Person Chong Guang once said that 'Overturned Lamp Fire' mysteriously repelled him."

"But he didn't understand the reason."

"Do you, Ancestor, see any clue?"

Master Tingyou glanced at Lü Yang with annoyance, "What do you take me for? A True Lord?"

"The Primordial Saint Sect's Perfected True Person, far superior to what I was back then, couldn't figure it out."

"How could I possibly know?"

"At least he still had a chance to seek gold, whereas I..."

At this point, a trace of sadness appeared on Master Tingyou's face.

However, he quickly regained his composure and actively changed the subject:

"Speaking of failing to seek gold, the Innate True Person was somewhat similar to him."

".What?"

Hearing this, Lü Yang was stunned and recalled the memories related to the Innate True Person he had obtained back when he absorbed the Dao Calamity.

However, since Lü Yang had not done it personally, but had left it to Chen Xin'an, there were inevitably gaps.

On the other hand, Master Tingyou, being like Chen Xin'an also a Banner Spirit who frequently communicated within the Myriad Spirit Banner, had a clearer understanding of the Innate True Person's life.

"The Innate True Person sought 'Long Flowing Water' back then."

Master Tingyou reminisced for a moment and said, "But the result was exactly the same as Chong Guang's—'Long Flowing Water' mysteriously repelled him, causing his failure and death."

"He never figured out why until his death."

"Otherwise, with his grand ambitions, he would have aspired to attain Fruition, become a True Lord, and then refine his Grand Completion First-Grade True Qi to perfect it completely."

Master Tingyou's account plunged Lü Yang into deep thought.

True Person Chong Guang had sought 'Overturned Lamp Fire'.

The Innate True Person had sought 'Long Flowing Water'.

The reasons for their failures were highly similar.

Lü Yang did not believe this was mere coincidence.

There must have been some elusive factor at work here.

In a trance, Lü Yang felt as if he had touched a thin veil.

His intuition told him that if he could pierce through this veil, he would reach the truth.

But when he tried to dig deeper, it felt nebulous and elusive.

Just then—

"Zheng——!!!"

A sword hum from beyond the clouds interrupted Lü Yang's thoughts.

Looking up, he saw a blazing sword light speeding toward him!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,335 words]

“Afraid it's that crazy woman from the Sword Pavilion.”

Looking at the approaching sword light, Lü Yang slightly furrowed his brows and immediately formed a hand seal, offering up the 【Imperial Palace Golden Seal of Dou Shuai True Command】 into the air.

The moment this half-true treasure spun in the air, it burst out with divine brilliance.

【Stellar Concealment Radiance】 !

With this half-true treasure that could simulate innate divine abilities, Lü Yang now was no different from a perfected mid-Foundation Establishment cultivator, no longer falling behind in cultivation compared to others.

Moreover, compared to other offensive divine abilities, 【Stellar Concealment Radiance】 excelled in concealment.

At this moment, the divine brilliance shrouded Lü Yang like a layer of gauze, instantly cutting off all causality and aura.

His figure gradually dimmed, melting into the surrounding environment.

Before long, the sword light sped over and sharply split apart.

Lü Yang hid in the shadows, glancing over, and saw atop her head a sword pill, wearing a green palace dress covered by wide-sleeved gauze robes—sure enough, it was Ye Guyue from the Sword Pavilion!

“Strange.”

Ye Guyue slightly furrowed her elegant brows, glanced around, then actually offered up the sword pill into the air and formed a seal with a finger.

In an instant, a magnificent sword light rippled out.

The sword light fell in the air, as if slicing something invisible.

In the blink of an eye, Lü Yang was shocked to find that the spiritual energy within a thousand-mile radius had been directly severed by this sword light, vanishing into nothingness!

‘She’s trying to force me out.’

Lü Yang understood perfectly.

This sword severed the spiritual energy.

Without spiritual energy, no matter how good the concealment, flaws would inevitably appear and be exposed.

‘Unfortunately, I am different!’

【Stellar Concealment Radiance】 specialized in concealment.

If it could be exposed so easily, it would be worthless.

To find Lü Yang now, one would need a treasure like the “Bing Fire” of the Celestial Observatory, using its light to scan the entire region for traces.

However, it was clear that Ye Guyue did not possess such a supreme treasure and could only watch helplessly, unable to locate him.

‘I wonder if I can attempt an ambush.’

Lü Yang pondered in his heart.

With 【Stellar Concealment Radiance】 paired with the Invisible Sword, he had previously used this combination to sneak up on Prince Qing and kill him with one strike.

‘Unfortunately, this combination probably won’t work on this woman.’

After all, as a True Person of the Sword Pavilion, Ye Guyue surely carried a defensive treasure like 【Hundred Perils Subduing Mysterious Cloak】 .

It was impossible to kill her with a single strike.

‘No rush, slow and steady wins the race. Wait for the opportunity.’

Lü Yang was very patient.

With the aid of 【Stellar Concealment Radiance】 , he distanced himself from Ye Guyue and watched from afar like a seasoned hunter.

On the other side, Ye Guyue was frowning deeply.

Her sword heart and sword intent told her that something felt off here.

Yet, after probing with both divine sense and sword techniques, she had found nothing.

‘The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind... you want to play the oriole?’

‘So be it!’

Ye Guyue scanned her surroundings once more, then looked toward the land of 【Yin Dragon Water】 ahead.

Soon, she made her decision.

As a sword cultivator, she had always been one to break rather than bend!

The next moment, she charged in without hesitation.

The area transformed by 【Yin Dragon Water】 was a barren wilderness shrouded in heavy rain and thin mist.

Now, however, it was cleaved open by her sword.

But for 【Yin Dragon Water】 , the rain and mist were mere illusions.

Its true form was this barren land formed by the convergence of countless waters.

At this moment, dark yin energy surged, autonomously attacking Ye Guyue.

Yet all were slashed apart by her sword.

She then prepared to cast a spell to collect this barren land.

However, at that moment—

As 【Yin Dragon Water】 was lifted into the air by Ye Guyue's immense power, a sudden surge of aura erupted from beneath it, accompanied by a deafening dragon roar:

“Roar——!”

In an instant, the winds howled and clouds surged.

The dark clouds that had been cleaved apart by Ye Guyue now rapidly gathered again, transforming into a mighty tidal wave that crashed down with a thunderous roar!

The dragon roared, and auspicious clouds followed!

Ye Guyue raised her embroidered brows slightly, showing no sign of panic.

After all, she had long suspected someone was lurking in the shadows.

Now, seeing someone finally make a move, she even laughed aloud:

“Vile beast, how dare you act so wildly?”

As her words fell, she slashed again!

The sword pill in the air tore out a thousand-mile-long blade of light, falling like a guillotine toward the ground.

In an instant, amidst a deafening silence, the tremendous collision rendered the surroundings eerily quiet.

The ground below seemed to experience a dragon's upheaval, erupting into several massive fissures that spread outward like a spiderweb from the center of their clash.

The clouds dispersed, and the sword light faded.

But in the next moment, both sides converged again and collided once more!

“Boom!”

This strike was even more intense than the last.

Not only did the ground's destruction worsen, but even the sky above was stirred by the violent astral winds generated by the collision.

Yet neither side was willing to stop.

The former, hailing from the Sword Pavilion, prided herself on combat prowess and was once a direct descendant of a Golden Core cultivator—how could she fear?

The latter was also from a noble lineage overseas.

Next moment, the clouds and sword light reappeared!

The two continued clashing dozens of times in succession, shaking heaven and earth.

So much so that even some Foundation Establishment True Persons sensed the commotion but dared not approach.

In the distance, Lü Yang was equally astonished.

He knew very well how strong Ye Guyue was—stronger even than Ye Xingfeng of the past.

He had no certainty of victory against her.

Yet the mysterious opponent could face her head-on without falling behind.

Moreover, they clearly weren't from the Four Great Factions.

Which Golden Core sect's direct disciple could this be?

That said, Lü Yang had no intention of seizing the opportunity to ambush.

Not only that, he even sneered inwardly.

With such a grand commotion, yet no bloodshed for so long, they were clearly fishing for someone to take the bait.

Playing this trick on my Primordial Saint Sect?

You're too naive!

“Boom!”

With a final loud explosion, both sides separated again, standing on opposite sides.

At the same time, Ye Guyue subtly glanced around, pondering to herself:

‘No one came to ambush me... seems like there really is no one else here!’

Indeed, though their battle had appeared earth-shattering, they had actually held back, not striking to kill.

It was all to see if anyone else would try to take advantage of the situation.

After all, most people would be tempted seeing such a scene if their concealment was good enough.

Few could resist the urge.

Had anyone attacked earlier, they would have faced a thunderous joint strike from the two of them.

Now that nothing had happened, Ye Guyue felt a bit more at ease.

She then looked again at her opponent, only to see him disperse the clouds, revealing a heroic youth wearing a crown with golden eyes.

The youth bared his teeth in a smile.

Though his appearance was strikingly handsome, he exuded a faintly sinister aura.

His white teeth gleamed coldly against his crimson lips, as if stained with blood.

He looked valiant, yet radiated a primal, bloodthirsty wildness.

“Four Seas Sect, Calamity Manifestation.”

In the distance, Lü Yang activated the Celestial Observatory, opening his brow’s Dharma Eye to look from afar.

He saw behind the heroic youth a towering, coiling shadow.

It was a true dragon!

Lü Yang quickly calculated with his fingers, instantly grasping the cause and effect:

“So it’s the Four Seas Sect, the number one sect overseas.

No wonder they produced such a true dragon!"

Indeed, this 【Calamity Manifestation】 was a true dragon!

"It is said that the Four Seas Sect has several Golden Core cultivators, including a Dragon King of the true dragon race.

This dragon must be a direct blood descendant of that Dragon King!"

This identity was far more prestigious than an ordinary True Person's descendant.

Unlike humans, dragon bloodlines inherently carried great power.

While human descendants merely benefited from the resources of their ancestor, dragon descendants inherited the divine might of their lineage.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 234: The Second-Grade True Art of the Sword Pavilion

[1,537 words]

"Fairy, you should retreat for now."

"This place is the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , which benefits this king's cultivation greatly. Of course, if you insist on using it, you may bathe here together with this king."

High in the air, that descendant of the Dragon King, 【Sui Ying】 , let out a light laugh, his flood-dragon eyes staring fixedly at Ye Guyue, as if hiding a certain wildness.

Dragons were inherently lustful beings.

This Dragon King already had over ten thousand wives and concubines overseas, with countless offspring.

Yet no matter who met him, they always acted with utmost respect.

Now, seeing Ye Guyue, such a cold and aloof fairy whose background even surpassed that of the Four Seas Sect, naturally stirred his thoughts.

However, in the face of such a gaze, Ye Guyue merely raised her embroidered brows slightly.

She showed no anger at all.

She simply glanced at the Dragon King and responded indifferently, "A beast covered in fur and horns, hatched from wet eggs, dares to make me retreat?"

The moment these words fell, Sui Ying's expression immediately changed!

"Wretched wench.!"

The Four Seas Sect was founded by the overseas monster clans.

Yet in today's world, humanity ruled the heavens and earth, and the various Dao Lords had established the supreme principle of cultivating in human form through their great powers.

As long as one took on human form, cultivation would yield twice the result with half the effort.

But if one remained in a non-human body, no matter how pure the bloodline or how great the talent, it would yield half the result with twice the effort.

Thus, even descendants of the Dragon King like 【Sui Ying】 had to assume human form when moving about, or they would find it difficult even to absorb the spiritual qi of heaven and earth!

This was already a matter of great embarrassment.

Now, with Ye Guyue's words—"covered in fur and horns, hatched from wet eggs"—every word pointed directly to his origin, outright exposing him as nothing more than a beast wearing a crown!

In an instant, a dragon's roar resounded once more!

Sui Ying's human form rapidly faded, replaced by a colossal dragon body that soared through the clouds, its form stretching over a thousand miles, too vast to fully behold.

The massive dragon head drooped down from the clouds, opening its mouth to exhale.

【Heavenly River Mouth】 !

In that instant, it was as if the heavenly river had burst its banks.

A vast blue sea of light surged from deep within the dragon's mouth, crashing down toward Ye Guyue like a mountain's summit.

This innate divine ability was formed by the fusion of the heavenly star 【Ren Water】 and the earthly evil star 【Tun Tan】 .

【Tun Tan】 , also known as Shen, represented the heavenly pass, the mouth of the heavenly river.

Ren Water was born here, capable of draining the metal and iron energies of the West.

Thus, this divine ability was most effective against sword cultivators like Ye Guyue!

This was precisely why Sui Ying had been so confident from the start.

However, Ye Guyue showed no sign of panic at all when she saw this.

Instead, a look of mockery flashed in her beautiful eyes, and the sword pill before her spun, radiating divine brilliance in turn.

【Ji Jin Hui】 !

Under the cover of divine brilliance, Ye Guyue's sword light did not dim at all under the wash of Sui Ying's 【Heavenly River Mouth】 .

On the contrary, it became even more dazzling and radiant!

"Slash!"

In the next moment, Ye Guyue was about to drive her sword forward to cut through the 【Heavenly River Mouth】 in one stroke.

However, just then, a sudden chill spread from her chest.

The chill spread from her chest to her internal organs, through her limbs and bones, finally rushing straight to her spiritual platform, nearly invading her soul.

This sudden change jolted her awake, and she immediately activated the treasure garment on her body to block the invading chill.

However, it was all in vain.

'Is this the invisible sword of my Sword Pavilion!?'

In a flash, the sword light that Ye Guyue had just condensed exploded violently, along with her dharma body, turning into a sky full of dazzling light.

"Boom!"

In the next moment, the spot where Ye Guyue had stood was like a thin veil being torn away, revealing Lü Yang's figure and an invisible sword.

A sneak attack!

Lü Yang had timed his strike with perfect precision, launching it just as Ye Guyue was fully committed to slashing at Sui Ying, catching her off guard and dealing her a heavy blow!

Though Ye Guyue also had protective treasures, they were clearly inferior to Lü Yang's invisible sword.

This superior spiritual treasure contained three mystical properties.

One of them, 【Pan Steel】 , had the power to defy logic and order, rendering ordinary defensive methods useless.

With a single slash, it broke through her defenses.

"Such a pity... I almost achieved complete success."

Lü Yang held the invisible sword in reverse grip and sighed regretfully.

After all, Ye Guyue was not King Qing.

At the critical moment, she had still managed to avoid a fatal blow.

In the final moment, Ye Guyue had not been shattered by his sword.

Rather, she had chosen to self-destruct her physical body, dispersing it to avoid the remaining sword energy.

Though Lü Yang did his best to kill her, he only managed to sever a small portion, while the majority of her essence escaped alive.

"However, this divine ability doesn't seem like the work of a sword cultivator."

Lü Yang looked into the distance and saw the scattered sword light gathering once again.

The dazzling radiance reformed into a humanoid figure once more.

However, this time, she was missing an arm.

In the next moment, Ye Guyue took out a shimmering pill and swallowed it, instantly regenerating flesh and bone, restoring her missing arm.

But Lü Yang could see clearly that this kind of pill was an emergency life-saving item.

Though it seemed to fully restore her at first glance, in reality, it consumed her vital essence, likely reserved for critical moments of survival.

Now, forced out by Lü Yang's sword, her overall strength was probably reduced by several levels.

Looking at Lü Yang, Ye Guyue's beautiful eyes turned icy cold, and she bit her silver teeth in anger.

"You demon..."

"Your granddaddy is right here!"

Lü Yang let out a loud laugh, then drew out another spiritual sword, its blade wreathed in blood light, clearly prepared to strike again.

【Abi Sword】 !

Lü Yang had no intention of exchanging words with Ye Guyue or giving her time to recover.

He offered the Abi Sword to the air, which immediately let out an excited sword cry.

Next came a blood-colored long rainbow!

Unlike the treacherous and sinister invisible sword, the Abi Sword's style was bold and overwhelming, aiming to crush opponents with sheer force.

Moreover, after the battle in **【Qing Kingdom】**, Lü Yang had used the Abi Sword to wipe out the Upper Mystic Sword Sect.

With the **【Butcher of Men】**'s mystical power boosting its effectiveness against sword cultivators, its power had greatly increased!

Meanwhile, Sui Ying also reacted.

Without any hesitation, he activated the radiant light on his dragon horns, stirring up waves of clouds and water, completely sealing off all of Ye Guyue's escape routes.

Adding insult to injury!

They were enemies to begin with.

Eliminating one more foe was naturally welcome, especially since Sui Ying, being from overseas, had no reason to show mercy when dealing with cultivators from the mainland.

While attacking, he was also speculating about Lü Yang's identity.

'This person had arrived long ago, deliberately hiding on the outskirts and patiently waiting until this moment to strike.

So sinister... could he be a True Person from the Primordial Saint Sect?'

At the same time, Ye Guyue sighed in her heart.

'This demon is too cunning. There is no chance of victory this time.

Especially with a true dragon involved, the only choice is to retreat and regroup for another battle.'

With that thought, Ye Guyue changed her hand seal.

In the next second, her aura shifted as well.

Brilliant patterns appeared on her brows, suddenly transforming her cold and aloof demeanor into something seductively enchanting.

She gently parted her lips and chanted aloud:

" 【Nine Offspring Heavenly Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword Art】 !"

In the next moment, her sword light surged violently.

However, the once pure and snowy sword light now bore nine blood-colored patterns of eerie brilliance.

"Boom!"

The sword light collided and then exploded, bursting out like countless bolts of lightning, with boundless violent astral winds raging across the sky.

Facing the combined strike of Lü Yang and Sui Ying, Ye Guyue was clearly unable to resist.

Yet, there was no sign of despair on her face.

Her figure gradually faded until she completely disappeared, replaced by a naked phantom beauty bearing her likeness.

"Pop!"

With a soft sound, the phantom beauty shattered, taking the full brunt of Lü Yang and Sui Ying's attack.

As for Ye Guyue, she had already vanished without a trace.

"...She escaped?"

Lü Yang raised his brows slightly.

The technique Ye Guyue had used at the end was completely different from the usual techniques of the Sword Pavilion.

It gave him a very familiar feeling.

It was just like—

"It's a Second-Grade True Art!"

Inside the Myriad Spirits Banner, Ancestor Ting You, who had been observing the entire battle, finally spoke.

"Not only that, she seems to have already completed the 【External Qi Harvesting】 step!"

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang immediately narrowed his eyes.

"Sigh, Ancestor, you're making things too difficult for me."

To be honest, since he personally had no interest in women, he had originally planned to kill Ye Guyue directly.

But now, it seemed that he would have to adjust his strategy a little.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,541 words]

Ye Guyue escaped, and Lü Yang's attention immediately shifted to Sui Ying.

The two exchanged a glance, both seeing fear and urgency in each other's eyes.

The fear naturally came from each other's strength.

Lü Yang had already exposed himself and lost the chance to strike by surprise.

It was obviously unrealistic to try and take down this True Dragon King.

Sui Ying felt the same way.

As for the urgency, it was because their earlier battle had made too much noise, attracting some truly formidable enemies.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang immediately spoke:

"Split it in half?"

Sui Ying's golden eyes turned at these words, but without hesitation, he nodded at once, "Agreed!"

As his voice fell, the two appeared together.

Each grabbed one end of the 【Yin Dragon Water】 .

Then they tore it apart simultaneously, splitting the spiritual embryo into two halves!

In the next moment, Sui Ying's figure swiftly vanished into the distance.

Lü Yang put away his half of the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , then performed a hand seal.

He once again used the 【Star Concealing Radiance】 to mask his aura and presence, disappearing from the spot as well.

After a while, a streak of light flew in.

Divine sense swept over the area, seeing only the ruins left by a great battle.

The newcomer was slightly startled by what lay before him—a vast and magnificent sight.

Aside from the ground patched with spider-web-like cracks, most of the surrounding mountains and forests had been cut down by half.

The clouds high above in the sky had been forcefully split apart from the center, revealing a massive sword mark like a heavenly ravine.

Even now, clouds continued to flow toward the sword mark, trying to fill it.

The power of that sword was self-evident.

Thinking of this, the person in the light felt somewhat fortunate.

Luckily, he had arrived a little late; otherwise, how could he have withstood that sword?

He circled the area a few more times, but finding nothing, decisively gave up and flew quickly toward the next opportunity.

Meanwhile, Lü Yang had found a forest to rest in temporarily.

"Half of the 【Yin Dragon Water】 is still usable."

Although the value of the 【Yin Dragon Water】 as a spiritual embryo had greatly diminished after being torn in half, making it unfit for refining spiritual treasures or pills, Lü Yang did not mind.

After all, he was never skilled in artifact or pill refinement.

He had seized this spiritual embryo solely to nourish the 【Abi Sword】 , using it as consumable material.

"Master!"

Soon, as Lü Yang summoned the Abi Sword, spiritual light flickered on the blade.

The sword spirit, a young girl in a red cotton jacket, joyfully jumped out from within.

She was extremely satisfied with Lü Yang as her sword master.

Not only could she feast on a few Foundation Establishment cultivators from time to time, but now she was even fed such a top-quality spiritual embryo.

She had once thought her old master, the Blood Demon True Person, was already formidable, but compared to Lü Yang, that old master seemed weak and incompetent.

"Eat it." Lü Yang pressed down on the sword spirit's head.

"Ah-woom!"

The sword spirit's mouth suddenly widened, devouring the entire 【Yin Dragon Water】 in one gulp.

She then patted her round belly and transformed back into light, returning to the sword.

In the next moment, the aura of the Abi Sword changed.

As Lü Yang had expected, with half of the 【Yin Dragon Water】 consumed, the Abi Sword, already nearing its limit, actually began to develop a fourth wondrous ability!

For a moment, colorful radiance flickered on the Abi Sword.

【Human Slayer】 , 【Treading Dangerously】 , and 【Named Artifact】 —the three existing abilities clustered around the blade like stars surrounding the moon, jointly stimulating the birth of the fourth ability.

After a short while, a brand new light emerged, and with it, karmic threads appeared.

Lü Yang calculated with his fingers, and the information of the new ability immediately surfaced in his mind.

Its name was: 【Dragon Stripping】 !

This ability was extremely sinister.

It created an illusory sword light from the Abi Sword, which was not real and could not harm anyone physically.

However, this illusory sword light specialized in severing karmic merits and fortunes!

Thus, anyone struck by the Abi Sword would suffer not only physical wounds but also a loss of karmic merit and fortune.

In the end, it would be no different from a heavenly punishment!

Take Ye Guyue earlier as an example.

If the Abi Sword had possessed the 【Dragon Stripping】 ability at that time, Ye Guyue would not have calmly and rationally chosen to flee.

Instead, he would have been clouded by calamity, recklessly engaging Lü Yang in a desperate fight without regard for the consequences.

The inevitable outcome would have been his death by Lü Yang's sword!

"Remarkable, truly remarkable."

At this moment, Lü Yang found himself completely enamored with the Abi Sword.

Especially now, after condensing a fourth ability, the sword's aura had become even more transcendent.

In simple terms, it was drawing closer to the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Decree】 !

"The 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Decree】 is a semi-true treasure forged by Daoist Hong Yun. If the Abi Sword can gather five wondrous abilities, it might reach a similar level!"

Just as Lü Yang was brimming with excitement, Ancestor Ting You quietly appeared.

"Something's not right."

A puzzled voice interrupted Lü Yang's thoughts, bringing him back to his senses.

He turned to look at Ancestor Ting You.

"Dare I ask, Ancestor, what seems to be wrong?"

"This ability feels off."

Ancestor Ting You frowned and said, "The 【Yin Dragon Water】 is of Chen Earth, the extreme Yin earth, the tomb of water, while your 【Abi Sword】 is formed of Geng Metal qi."

"By reason, when Geng Metal encounters water and earth, it should be silent, with the chill of metal and the cold of water leading to a risk of drowning. Although your Abi Sword didn't suffer damage after devouring it, the ability it birthed should not have been this strong. Yet, this 【Dragon Stripping】 clearly surpasses expectations, indicating that the two are not in conflict."

"They might even be in harmony."

At this point, Ancestor Ting You's face was full of doubt.

"But Geng Metal is Yang Metal, and Chen Earth is Yin Earth. Yang Metal and Yin Earth should not be compatible."

"How could this happen?"

Just then, Lü Yang suddenly felt a stirring in his heart.

In the next moment, the Formless Sword suddenly leapt out from his sleeve.

The strand of Xin Metal qi refined into the sword began to fluctuate violently, emitting resonant sword hums.

"Uncle Master Chong Guang... is looking for me?"

Lü Yang immediately understood.

That strand of Xin Metal qi was likely the former body left behind by True Person Chong Guang after reincarnating as an Immortal Spirit.

It was normal for the two to resonate.

"But just because you call me, do I have to go?"

Lü Yang sneered softly, speculating that even if True Person Chong Guang was still alive, he must be extremely weakened at this moment.

Calling for him now was likely because he had encountered trouble again.

Trying to make him take the fall once more?

While Lü Yang was pondering, his brows suddenly arched.

Although he was hiding, he constantly used the Heaven Seeking Instrument to calculate, with the light of Bing Fire illuminating all directions.

At this moment, he noticed something unusual.

He saw that, besides the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , the other three innate abilities within the Blessed Land had all been taken by someone, causing the entire Blessed Land to shake violently.

Such changes were like removing the supporting beams of a house.

As a result, in the center of the Blessed Land, an endless golden light emerged, replacing the four innate abilities to temporarily support the Blessed Land.

However, this only stabilized the central area, while the outer edges of the Blessed Land had already begun to collapse.

"This is forcing people toward the center... forcing me to go there?"

Lü Yang's expression grew heavy.

Not everyone was that greedy.

Some True Persons who knew they were not strong enough had already hidden after grabbing a few benefits from the outskirts.

But now, they could no longer hide.

With the edges of the Blessed Land collapsing, their safe zones were shrinking.

If they stayed in those collapsing areas, they could very well be crushed to death by the Blessed Land's power!

"What a brilliant open scheme!" Lü Yang clapped his hands and laughed.

With True Lord Qingcheng issuing strict orders to investigate, it was impossible for him to leave the Blessed Land.

But as long as he remained inside, he had no choice but to move toward the center and meet Chong Guang.

As for that golden light in the center of the Blessed Land, Lü Yang had already guessed its origin.

It was True Person Chong Guang's innate ability.

【Illuminated Flying Scenery Map】 !

"If True Person Chong Guang is truly still alive, his soul must be within that map."

"Moreover, this innate ability coming out on its own to forcibly sustain the Blessed Land..."

"It seems his Dao heart remains firm and has not yet given up."

At that moment, Lü Yang's law eye at his brow suddenly twitched.

Under the illumination of Bing Fire, he saw several streaks of light racing in from the outskirts.

One in front and three behind, clearly someone was being pursued.

Judging by their auras, all four were early-stage Foundation Establishment cultivators.

The one in front managed to hold his ground against the three pursuers, relying entirely on the brilliance of his magnificent treasure.

Lü Yang fixed his gaze and soon revealed a strange expression.

Because the one being hunted was none other than Chong Guang's son, Chong Ming!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,519 words]

"Jiangxi, Jiangdong, this is intolerable!"

Amidst countless dazzling lights, Chong Ming cursed angrily while holding a green jade token in his hand, frantically channeling his magical power to raise a shimmering radiant barrier.

This treasure was called the "Longevity Jade". Carrying it long-term could extend one's lifespan, ward off ferocious winds, and when used in battle, could dissolve fatal divine abilities. It had been specially bestowed upon him by Chong Guang for protection. At this moment, when activated in the air, it forcefully resisted the siege of three Foundation Establishment cultivators.

Even so, Chong Ming's expression remained unsightly.

After all, he had already been entangled with his pursuers for over half an hour. Though uninjured, he had no way to escape. If the fight dragged on, his chances of survival were becoming increasingly grim.

On the other hand, the pursuers seemed in no hurry.

"Daoist Friend Chong Ming, why resist so stubbornly?"

The three wore official uniforms, carried sabers and axes, and each had a glow atop their heads filled with endless talismans, outlining their divine titles.

【Commander of Dutian Division】 !

All three were unmistakably cultivators of the Dao Court. The Dutian Division was directly under the Emperor of the Dao Court. A Commander ranked as a Fifth Grade official, equivalent to a Foundation Establishment cultivator in the outside world.

At this moment, the three held equal ranks. With their divine powers combined, they formed the Three Talents Formation, drawing endless radiance. Their overwhelming magical power locked down the spiritual energy of the world, pressing upon Chong Ming

like a towering mountain. If not for the few superior spiritual treasures on his body, he might have been slain already.

Yet, the more desperate Chong Ming appeared, the more excited the three pursuers became.

"Daoist Friend Chong Ming, we aren't trying to make things difficult for you. If you hand over all those treasures you're carrying, perhaps we might spare your life."

"Nonsense!"

Chong Ming sneered coldly upon hearing this. Abandoning wealth to preserve life? Giving up his treasures now would truly mean losing his life, so he ignored their words entirely.

"Hahaha! Do you still think someone is coming to save you?"

The leading Dao Court Commander laughed loudly. "Let me tell you, even the Holy Sect itself might have people hoping for your death right now!"

"Do you take us for fools?"

"The descendants of the Holy Sect's True Person—nine out of ten have problems! As Chong Guang's son, surely he left some contingency on you as well!"

"If you make it out of here, Chong Guang might really have a chance to recover. So our sole mission in entering this blessed land is to kill you! As for the Holy Sect... if Chong Guang dies, his position will be vacant, and not everyone waiting for promotion would want to see you save him!"

"Like that one... Yuan Tu? Hahaha!"

"You...!"

Chong Ming paid no heed to their earlier attempts to persuade him, but this detailed analysis struck a chord, making him grit his teeth. It indeed hit his inner anxiety.

Would Father really do such a thing?

In his memory, his proud father, who had vowed to become the first True Lord of this great calamity, was not someone who would seize his child's body.

Back when the Master of Mending Heaven Peak used his own children as materials and was ultimately countered by Lü Yang and struck dead by heavenly lightning, Chong Guang had even mocked him disdainfully. Thus, Chong Ming found it hard to believe his

father would do the same now. Yet, he could not deny that this planted a seed of doubt in his heart.

"There's a flaw!"

Seeing Chong Ming's shaken spirit, one of the Commanders' eyes lit up. He pulled out a bronze gong and struck it heavily with magical power.

"DONG——!"

In an instant, a deafening shockwave burst forth, directly striking Chong Ming's soul, shaking him to the core and dispersing most of his protective radiance.

'It's over!'

In his daze, Chong Ming felt a chill spreading in his heart. He quickly bit down on a pill, preparing to endure the enemy's next fierce assault. But when he came to his senses, he realized the three Dao Court Commanders surrounding him had not advanced. Instead, they stood frozen, their expressions stiff.

'What's going on?'

Chong Ming stood dumbfounded, following their gaze to look behind him. In that moment, he was nearly scared out of his wits.

Behind him, at some unknown moment, a person had appeared.

The newcomer wore a dark robe, a sword hanging at his waist, and a gentle smile on his face. In his hand, he held a large head that still glimmered faintly with residual divine power.

"Hmm?"

Staring at the head in Lü Yang's hand, the remaining two Dao Court Commanders finally realized that their comrade who had just been taunting loudly was now a corpse.

When did this happen? How was it done?

As mere Foundation Establishment cultivators, they had no way of understanding the mystery of the 【Star Concealing Radiance】. By now, Lü Yang's divine ability had already enveloped everything within a hundred miles.

【Star Concealing Radiance】 could obscure karma and conceal forms. Under its cover, what they could or could not see was entirely within Lü Yang's control. Thus, even though he had just beheaded a Dao Court Commander in front of them, the remaining two had not noticed at all.

". True Person!"

Only then did Chong Ming react, nearly weeping with joy, instinctively calling out the title used in the Dao Struggle Battlefield.

In the next second, the radiant barrier collapsed.

The two remaining Dao Court Commanders didn't hesitate for even a moment. They turned and fled immediately. After all, who hadn't heard of Lü Yang's fearsome reputation? Hadn't he already slaughtered his way through 【Kingdom of Qing】 ?

And in terms of Dao Court hierarchy, their Commander rank didn't even match the Qing King's. Lü Yang had killed the Qing King with a single strike. Killing them would be even easier. Let alone the two of them— even if twenty remained, it would still likely end in a single sword stroke!

In an instant, two streaks of light fled in opposite directions.

But they were swiftly dragged back by Lü Yang's 【Fated Connection Severance】 . Two invisible sword strikes later, two more lifeless heads fell to the ground.

"True Person..."

Staring at the three severed heads, then at Lü Yang turning toward him with a smile, pressing his hand on the Abyssal Sword, Chong Ming's expression gradually stiffened.

"Call me Senior Brother."

Lü Yang grinned, speaking softly, "What's with this True Person talk? Uncle Chong Guang treated me with great kindness. You are his only son. Calling me True Person makes us seem distant. Besides, Uncle Chong Guang treated you pretty well, didn't he? Left you with so many treasures?"

Newest chapters first released at 69shu Bar!

As Lü Yang spoke, he began to appraise Chong Ming.

The latter wore a Daoist robe, with talismans and jade pendants hanging from his waist, a string of magical beads around his neck, treasure bracelets on his wrists— his entire body practically glowing like a walking divine ability!

"True Person, you misunderstand..."

Chong Ming cautiously explained, "These were what I found inside the blessed land. They seemed to be my father's storage vault. I just happened to take advantage of it."

He quickly added, "If there's anything that catches your eye, I am willing to offer it up."

"Uncle Chong Guang's vault?"

Lü Yang raised his eyebrows slightly upon hearing this. After calculating with his fingers, he chuckled, "So that's how it is. Junior Brother, you're mistaken. That was my stash in the blessed land. I just forgot to retrieve it earlier."

"How could you offer me my own treasures?"

". Huh?"

Lü Yang's shameless claim left Chong Ming dumbstruck. When he processed what was said, his handsome face flushed an ugly shade of purple.

But before he could respond, Lü Yang had already thrown a 【Fated Connection Severance】 onto him. In the next moment, all the radiant spiritual artifacts covering Chong Ming were stripped away, leaving him in a single inner robe of low-grade magical fabric—something Lü Yang had disdainfully spared.

"Rustle..."

At that moment, though he was already a Foundation Establishment cultivator, detached from worldly concerns, the passing breeze still made Chong Ming feel a chill he hadn't experienced in a long time.

'Beast, you beast!!!'

Lü Yang had actually stripped him bare!

Yet in the very next second, Chong Ming's body froze in place. Lü Yang, having stripped him, didn't stop. Instead, he stared directly at him.

And in Lü Yang's eyes, there was a hint of killing intent!

'Whether or not this person is a contingency left by True Person Chong Guang, since he's fallen into my hands, I might as well eliminate him to prevent future troubles!'

"Shiiing——!"

The invisible sword was unsheathed with a fierce aura.

But just at that moment, a gentle breeze suddenly stirred, carrying a deep sigh that echoed softly into Lü Yang's ears:

"Yuan Tu... is this really necessary?"

The voice came from all directions, as if the very world itself were speaking to him.

In an instant, Lü Yang's eyes narrowed slightly. Without making any sudden moves, he silently retracted the invisible sword that had been pressing against Chong Ming's throat, just a breath away from decapitating him.

"Uncle, you misunderstand. I was just joking with Junior Brother Chong Ming."

That familiar voice and tone...

It was unmistakably True Person Chong Guang!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 237: People Must Rely on Themselves

[1,486 words]

As the gentle breeze blew past, a figure naturally emerged beside Chong Ming, formed entirely by the spontaneous gathering of the spiritual energy of heaven and earth.

"Father."

Seeing this scene, Chong Ming immediately revealed a complicated expression.

However, before he could speak, his figure suddenly vanished from where he stood.

"Hmm?"

Seeing this, Lü Yang raised an eyebrow.

Because he was also proficient in this kind of teleportation divine ability, he could tell that Chong Ming had been sent out of the Blessed Land.

In the next second, he saw Chong Guang looking at him with a half-smile and softly saying, "What, surprised? Do you really think I, like that fool Chen Taihe, intend to use my child as a scapegoat?"

"Such so-called true disciples of the Primordial Saint Sect have only learned the superficial aspects and cannot be considered genuine heirs."

“Martial Uncle, your righteousness is admirable.”

Lü Yang, of course, would not refute, so he cupped his hands and offered some praise.

In reality, he did not believe it at all, since the other party had tricked him not long ago.

Seeing this, Chong Guang also showed a helpless expression and said, “Chong Ming is truly not my backup plan. He is Miao Yin’s.”

“Miao Yin, like that fool Chen Taihe, is trapped at the peak of the Foundation Establishment mid-stage, wanting to break through to the late stage, yet lacking the confidence to withstand the Heavenly Thunder Tribulation.”

“And so, Chong Ming came into being.”

“Unfortunately, Chong Ming’s talent is limited and he is rebellious. Miao Yin’s methods of nurturing disciples are inferior to Chen Taihe’s, so she has been unable to meet her own needs for a long time.”

“This time, she brought Chong Ming to my Blessed Land, most likely intending to persuade me to seize Chong Ming’s body, preserve the Blessed Land, and, if I were willing to sacrifice everything to survive, perhaps I could continue living with my Foundation Establishment peak cultivation.”

“At that time, she could use Chong Ming to perform the scapegoat technique.”

“In other words, she just wants me to take the fall for her.”

Lü Yang immediately showed a look of realization.

Was there truly no backup plan placed on Chong Ming by Chong Guang? Not necessarily!

But because of Miao Yin, whether there was one before or not, now there was none!

After all, if he really seized Chong Ming, it would only benefit Miao Yin.

Since that was the case, he might as well speak nicely about it.

This was the way of Dao Companions in the Primordial Saint Sect.

In the Saint Sect, things like mother and child, husband and wife, sharing hardships... love—were all lies.

If you believed it, you had already been fooled!

“So, Yuan Tu, today I will teach you the final lesson.”

Chong Guang looked at Lü Yang and said in a deep voice, “Using outsiders as materials has always been the style of the Saint Sect, but that is merely a method, not the foundation of the Saint Sect.”

“Especially when it comes to the future path of Dao, using outsiders as materials sounds pleasant, but in reality, it places the hope of seeking Dao on others.”

“And the Great Dao has no regrets. You may succeed once, twice, but as long as you fail once, you lose everything.”

“Why is Foundation Establishment considered 【True Person】 ?”

“Because a Foundation Establishment True Person has the power to resist.”

“If you use Foundation Establishment True Persons as materials, you might succeed many times, but there is always a chance of failure.”

“And true direct disciples of the Saint Sect do not gamble on that slim chance.”

“In the end, the only one we can believe in is ourselves!”

As his words fell, the aura of True Person Chong Guang suddenly soared.

It was as if he had returned to the days when he was still seeking the Golden Core.

The fighting spirit in his expression showed no signs of weakening.

“People must rely on themselves!”

In the next second, Chong Guang took a step forward.

In an instant, Lü Yang felt as if the mountains and rivers of heaven and earth were retreating.

Clearly, he had no intention of following, yet he was still forced to travel alongside him.

“Martial Uncle... are you trying to forcibly take me with you?”

“You can choose to leave as well.”

Chong Guang smiled slightly, seemingly unconcerned.

“However, True Lord Feixue is not someone who is easy to talk to.”

“If you go out, you might suffer a little.”

“ ... ”

Hearing this, Lü Yang also showed a helpless expression.

In fact, with his temperament, if it weren't for the True Lord's prior orders, he would have turned around and fled long ago.

Having already gained the 【Yin Dragon Water】 was a huge profit.

He was not greedy.

Leaving the Blessed Land early and returning only after Chong Guang was completely dead was more in line with his usual style.

However, with True Lord Feixue watching from outside and having issued strict investigation orders, if he left rashly, he would surely be punished.

“So, Martial Uncle, what was the reason for your failure?”

Hearing this, Chong Guang glanced at Lü Yang and said indifferently, “Do you think the mighty figures in the heavens would not understand something that even I have figured out?”

“Do you really think they don't know?”

“If they truly didn't know, why would they send you in to ask me?”

“Wouldn't it be simpler to directly capture my soul from the Blessed Land and search it on the spot?”

At this point, Chong Guang sneered coldly.

“They had already guessed it!”

“They just didn't know who it was... and seeing that I still had strength left, they were waiting for me to stake my life in one last struggle!”

They had already guessed?

Chong Guang's words made Lü Yang pause, then quickly realize.

“Our entering the Blessed Land to search and loot was within Martial Uncle's and the True Lords' expectations?”

Hearing this, Chong Guang nodded and looked at the collapsing Blessed Land.

“I failed once and could no longer maintain such a vast Blessed Land.”

“So I needed someone to help me make it smaller.”

“You all took away the spirit embryos formed from my four innate divine abilities, which is actually more beneficial to me.”

Lü Yang still frowned.

“But wouldn’t that make your Dao incomplete, Martial Uncle?”

Hearing this, Chong Guang laughed.

“Do you think innate divine abilities can be divided so easily?”

“Innate talent and great divine abilities are both eternally proven.”

“The root has long been integrated with my soul.”

“What is revealed outside are just branches and leaves.”

“Otherwise, if you were to reincarnate, would you have to refine the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend all over again to seek divine abilities?”

At this point, Chong Guang’s voice suddenly turned low and heavy.

His eyes revealed a trace of resentment.

“Yes... it cannot be changed. The Great Dao has no regrets!”

This tone immediately made Lü Yang realize something.

The Great Dao has no regrets... it cannot be changed...

Could the reason for Chong Guang’s failure in seeking the Golden Core lie in his Dao path, in the completion of his four innate divine abilities?

Thinking back to the doubts raised by Patriarch Ting You earlier.

In an instant, a thought surfaced in Lü Yang’s mind.

“...Is it the 【Yin Dragon Water】 ?”

As soon as these words came out, Chong Guang immediately turned his gaze, giving Lü Yang a deep look before nodding.

“Daoist Ting You of the Witch Ghost Path... truly lives up to his reputation for comprehension.”

“???”

Lü Yang immediately felt displeased.

Wasn't it clearly thanks to my unparalleled wisdom that I figured this out?

Patriarch Ting You only provided a tiny bit of help!

But what was wrong with the 【Yin Dragon Water】 ?

With True Person Chong Guang's cultivation and True Lord Feixue personally overseeing it, there should have been no mistake in the selection of the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend.

After all, this was the foundation for seeking the Golden Core.

Yet, it was precisely in this area that something had gone wrong, which was hard to believe.

Lü Yang showed a thoughtful expression.

His divine sense quietly entered the Myriad Spirits Banner and looked at Patriarch Ting You.

“Patriarch, what do you think is wrong with the 【Yin Dragon Water】 ?”

“...There is only one possibility.”

However, as these words fell, Lü Yang saw that Patriarch Ting You, who had always remained calm even in the face of disaster, now showed a look of shock and fear.

“The Abi Sword is formed from Geng Metal Qi, and Geng Metal is Yang Metal.”

“And Yang Metal can only harmonize with Yang Earth!”

“The 【Yin Dragon Water】 is formed from Chen Earth Qi, the most Yin and soft Earth in the world... It's all wrong!”

“The 【Yin Dragon Water】 should fundamentally be Yang Earth!”

Lü Yang was shocked by these words.

“Was the knowledge wrong?”

“No!”

Patriarch Ting You shook his head.

“If it were just a mistake in knowledge, would Golden Core True Persons not know?”

“With the Primordial Saint Sect’s long-standing heritage, how could they be completely ignorant?”

“It was truly changed!”

“Our Witch Ghost Path once nurtured the 【Heavenly Corpse Fiend】 , which was also formed from Chen Earth Qi.”

“I can confirm that all the Chen Earth Qi in the world was Yin Earth!”

The answer was self-evident.

Chen Earth was originally Yang but had been silently altered by some mighty figure!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,468 words]

“So that’s how it is!”

Under the reminder of his own astounding wisdom, Lü Yang suddenly came to a realization, as if he had finally lifted the thin veil that had always shrouded his mind.

【Yin Dragon Water】 , Chen Earth is originally Yang!

Now that he thought back again, which four Heavenly Stems and Earthly Branches did Chong Guang need for the fruition of 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 ? And how did they combine?

【Eternal Spring Tree】 , Jia Wood of Yang nature.

【Yin Dragon Water】 , Chen Earth of Yin nature.

【Fearful Severing】 , Yi Wood of Yin nature.

【Rigid Flame Furnace】 , Si Fire of Yin nature.

Three Yin and one Yang—how could they ever harmonize? True fruition should be a pairing of Yin and Yang to be complete and flawless! Chong Guang’s path was flawed from the very foundation!

“The key lies in Chen Earth. In 【Yin Dragon Water】 , this Heavenly Stem and Earthly Branch was supposed to be Yang Earth, but its nature had been twisted into Yin Earth. This was why, even with the guidance of Overturning Lamp Fire, Chong Guang’s path could not harmonize with it, and even triggered rejection!”

Lü Yang figured it out almost instantly.

“Moreover, even the Innate True Person probably fell at this point as well! The fruition he sought was 【Long Flowing Water】 , and this fruition likewise required the energy of Chen Earth!”

What was 【Long Flowing Water】 ?

Heavenly Stems of 【Ren Water】 and 【Gui Water】 combined with the Earthly Branches of 【Chen Earth】 and 【Si Fire】 to achieve fruition. But due to the transformation of Chen Earth into Yin nature—

This fruition was ruined as well!

Besides these, were there other fruitions that required Chen Earth?

At that moment, Lü Yang’s Divine Calculation Instrument at his brow spun rapidly, deducing the heavenly mechanisms, his fingers almost producing sparks: “In addition to these... there are three more fruitions!”

【White Wax Metal】 , 【Sand within Earth】 , and 【Great Forest Wood】 !

Memories of the past surged through Lü Yang’s mind, almost making him cry out, “ 【Great Forest Wood】 ... Observing the Golden Elixir Decree! That 【Exalted True Monarch Covering the Sky】 !”

A True Monarch of the Primordial Saint Sect!

The infamous disgrace of the Primordial Saint Sect, known by all factions as a pushover. Back then, Lü Yang already felt something was off, and now it turned out to be true after all!

However, his conclusion did not move Chong Guang. Instead, Chong Guang shook his head: “【Exalted True Monarch Covering the Sky】 died in a great catastrophe tens of thousands of years ago, just like the former Daoist Hong Yun. It was said he was betrayed by several True Monarchs of the Primordial Saint Sect... He has not ascended for tens of thousands of years. He must be long dead.”

“However... the True Monarchs likely suspect him as well.”

After all, just being from the Primordial Saint Sect was reason enough for suspicion. That was why, at this moment, so many True Monarchs were silently waiting outside the Blessed Land.

“They are all waiting for me.”

Chong Guang placed his hands behind his back and smiled faintly: “Waiting for me to risk my life once more, to force the enemy to show themselves, and finally expose their true identity.”

Meanwhile, outside the Blessed Land—

“Rumble!”

The qi of all the True Monarchs surged violently. True Monarch Clear Snow Flying in the Sky clenched her silver teeth tightly, her beautiful eyes, like autumn water, revealing a hint of frenzied scarlet:

“Clearly I saw it, perceived it, yet I just couldn’t understand it, couldn’t guess it... What a 【Barrier of Knowledge and Perception】 !”

The transformation of Chen Earth’s nature was indeed subtle, but theoretically, a Golden Elixir True Monarch who had lived countless ages could not possibly be unaware of its original attribute before it was changed.

Yet no one had noticed!

This power that could affect the entire world, even deceiving Golden Elixir True Monarchs, was no longer something an ordinary True Monarch could perform.

“Late stage... or even Perfected?”

“To alter 【Chen Earth】 and simultaneously block five fruitions, encompassing Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth—someone seeks to attain Nascent Soul and become a Dao Lord!?”

“Covering the Sky!?”

In an instant, not only the True Monarchs of the four factions on the mainland, but even the distant overseas powers had their overwhelming qi soaring into the sky, scouring heaven and earth, revealing shock and anger.

No one wished to see a new Dao Lord emerge.

For the inland, Jiangdong, Jiangxi, Jiangnan, and Jiangbei—the four major factions balanced each other. The appearance of a new Dao Lord would only break this balance, benefiting no one.

For the overseas powers, it was even worse. The Four Seas Sect already had multiple Golden Elixirs holding power. If another Dao Lord emerged who could not gain a foothold inland, they would most likely come to the seas. That would be akin to having an Emperor looming over their heads—who could tolerate that?

Just as Chong Guang had thought.

The fruition of 【Great Forest Wood】 was simply too conspicuous. Coupled with the fact that the original master of 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 , Daoist Hong Yun, was already dead, it was hard not to associate it with him.

“Covering the Sky... is it really him?”

“Even if it is Covering the Sky, he cannot be allowed to live!”

“If the Primordial Saint Sect truly has someone seeking Dao Lordhood... stop him at all costs!”

For a moment, all factions were tangled in their thoughts. Even within the Primordial Saint Sect itself, above the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, the expression of True Monarch Clear Snow Flying in the Sky shifted unpredictably.

“Covering the Sky...”

She, too, harbored doubts. From the stance of the Primordial Saint Sect, she undoubtedly had to step forward. Yet, the one who suffered the greatest loss this time was herself.

How could she accept this?

If she had known earlier that Chen Earth had an issue, would she have let Chong Guang pursue 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 ? Damn it, couldn't he have given her a hint?

What a beast!

Thinking this, True Monarch Clear Snow Flying in the Sky had already made her decision: even if they were both True Monarchs of the same sect, if someone dared to ruin her Dao path, it would still be a fight to the death!

At this moment, inside the Blessed Land—

Chong Guang had already led Lü Yang to the center of the Blessed Land. Lü Yang glanced around and found that almost all the Foundation Establishment True Persons who had entered the Blessed Land had gathered there.

Ye Guyue and True Person Miaoyin were also among them.

Especially True Person Miaoyin. When she saw Chong Guang but did not see Chong Ming, her delicate face subtly changed, and her beautiful eyes revealed a trace of anger.

“Chong Guang...”

For a moment, everyone’s gaze fell on Chong Guang, who then looked up at the sky and laughed loudly: “I’ve truly kept everyone waiting!”

Boom!

As his words fell, thunderous roars echoed throughout the Blessed Land. The Foundation Establishment True Persons present remained silent, for everyone knew clearly in their hearts—

Chong Guang’s words were not directed at them.

The ones who had truly been waiting were the True Monarchs standing outside the Blessed Land, whose invisible gazes weighed heavier than tangible mountains.

Only Chong Guang remained unfazed.

It was only then that Lü Yang, in hindsight, suddenly recalled something: since 【Yin Dragon Water】 had already been altered in its Yin-Yang nature by a mighty figure,

Why could it still resonate with the Abyssal Sword?

Unless—

‘Chong Guang True Person... had changed it back!?’

Though Lü Yang had no idea what method he had used, there was no doubt that the fact that 【Yin Dragon Water】 could resonate with the Abyssal Sword meant that it had already reverted to Yang Earth!

This was the true meaning of 【Reversal】 !

“Rumble!”

In the next moment, Lü Yang looked up at the sky and saw the cloudless heavens, stars shining brightly. Above the Foundation Establishment realm, in the Sea of Bitterness, the light and shadow of 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 appeared once again.

For the second time!

Compared to the last reversal of the rules of the Kingdom of Qing, this appearance of 【Overturning Lamp Fire】 was even more dazzling, even proactively descending a guiding light!

For a moment, Lü Yang was astounded beyond words.

‘With all the True Monarchs watching, if the one who had altered 【Chen Earth】 dared to reveal themselves, the True Monarchs would surely deal with them. What’s more, since Chong Guang had managed to reverse 【Chen Earth】 back, this was undoubtedly something all the True Monarchs would be pleased to see. Not only would they not stop him, they might even help him!’

But was this really the will of the True Monarchs?

Of course not!

The True Monarchs had their own calculations. It was Chong Guang who had taken the most crucial step—reversing 【Chen Earth】 —that granted him this second chance!

Chong Guang had been right all along.

From the very beginning, the hidden card he left behind was never Chong Ming. At the final step of seeking gold, the one he relied on from start to finish had always been himself!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,565 words]

At this moment, Chong Guang’s figure once again soared into the sky.

And following along with him was the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 , which had already been heavily plundered by Lü Yang and the other Foundation Establishment True Persons, leaving only a small central area intact.

Compared to before, this was undoubtedly much more shabby.

It seemed that even if he ascended to claim the Fruit Position and transformed it into a Cave Heaven, there would still be enormous flaws that would require a long time to slowly mend and restore.

However, no matter what, there was always a sliver of hope!

And even if there was only a sliver of hope, Chong Guang did not hesitate at all. He had already begun his ascent, and in his hand, a thick talisman book suddenly appeared out of thin air.

【Life Exchange Fate Changing Talisman Book】 !

This treasure, which had fallen into Hong Ju's hands and had been crafted by Daoist Hong Yun in the past, was a Fruit Position treasure derived from the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 and truly involved methods at the Golden Core realm.

Previously, Hong Ju had lent this to Lü Yang to write a single phrase, using it to assassinate Prince Qing. Afterwards, Hong Ju had taken it back. Who would have thought that after Hong Ju's death, this Fruit Position treasure would be silently reclaimed by Chong Guang? And now, as he brought it out once again, what was he planning to do?

Very quickly, Lü Yang understood Chong Guang's intentions.

He saw Chong Guang open the 【Life Exchange Fate Changing Talisman Book】 , and behind his head, circles of radiant light emerged, astonishingly revealing the vast karmic merits and fate he had once possessed as an Innate Celestial Spirit!

At this moment, however, all those karmic merits and fate were being entirely consumed by him!

Celestial Spirits, born of heaven and nurtured by earth, were favored by the heavens and earth, their karmic merits and fate far exceeding those of ordinary people. Yet now, it was only enough for Chong Guang to write six short characters in the book:

【I can make Chen Earth return.】

By the time the sixth character was written, Chong Guang had already exhausted all his karmic merits and fate. Boundless tribulation qi had already emerged, and with this death, he was destined to reincarnate as a pig or a dog for a hundred lifetimes!

Yet, even so, Chong Guang still maintained a calm expression.

His gaze remained clear, clearly using some secret technique to temporarily suppress the influence of the tribulation qi. His hand did not slow down in the slightest.

Immediately after, he turned his gaze toward the gathered mid-Foundation Establishment cultivators.

He then gave a kind smile:

“Everyone, I must trouble you to lend me a hand.”

As soon as his words fell, almost everyone felt their own karmic merits and fate being stirred by some force, irresistibly surging toward Chong Guang!

However, Lü Yang had long since been accustomed to this, even to the point of finding it routine.

‘It’s this trick again...!’

Which of the Foundation Establishment True Persons present hadn’t taken something from the Dongyang Blessed Land? All of these were karmic debts, and now, it was time for them to repay!

Especially Lü Yang, who had practically stripped Chong Ming clean, taking so many treasures. The karmic debt he owed Chong Guang had already compounded upon itself endlessly and could never be fully repaid. Now that Chong Guang’s secret technique fell upon him, it was naturally merciless, clearly aiming to drain all his karmic merits and fate!

For a moment, countless people wished to flee from the Blessed Land.

However, when they activated their escape lights, they found that the entire Blessed Land had already been completely sealed off. With their mere mid-Foundation Establishment cultivation, there was no way they could break through!

In the past, there would have been True Monarchs stationed outside who might have intervened to save people.

But now?

The True Monarchs outside had already changed their stance, eager to help Chong Guang ascend. How could they possibly stop him? They would only sit back and watch as the situation continued to unfold!

And with Chong Guang's cultivation, suppressing a group of mid-Foundation Establishment cultivators was as easy as flipping his hand!

'I knew it... True Persons of the Saint Sect cannot be trusted!'

Seeing this, Lü Yang sighed softly: "Didn't Uncle-Master say that one must rely on oneself?"

"Indeed."

True Person Chong Guang smiled slightly: "The karmic merits and fate I am plundering by my own ability, how could that not be considered relying on myself? Yuan Tu, you should endure a little longer."

However, in the very next second, Chong Guang's voice suddenly halted.

Because in Lü Yang's hand, the Abyssal Sword suddenly erupted with a flash of light. The wondrous ability 【Chi Dragon】 activated, with the sword's tip pointed directly at Chong Guang.

"Uncle-Master, I leave the decision to you."

Lü Yang's expression remained calm. Since he had plundered Chong Ming, how could he not have anticipated the trouble that would follow? Naturally, he had the confidence to handle it, or he wouldn't have dared to make such a move in the first place.

"Either you stop yourself, or I strike with this sword."

Of course, this strike couldn't harm Chong Guang's body, but with the wondrous ability 【Chi Dragon】 enhancing it, it could sever karmic fate!

Chong Guang had gone through great effort to gather the karmic merits and fate of so many people. If Lü Yang were to strike now and ruin everything at the last moment, it would be a massive loss!

At this thought, a smile immediately appeared on True Person Chong Guang's face:

"Yuan Tu, you misunderstand. Just now, I was merely testing your capability. Now that I see it clearly, you are indeed a pillar of our Saint Sect, with boundless prospects."

Lü Yang likewise smiled: "Uncle-Master flatters me."

With that, the two exchanged glances.

'Little fox!'

‘Dog bastard!’

The camaraderie of their former days as fellow disciples had now been utterly torn apart. After a moment of silence, True Person Chong Guang finally spoke in a low voice:

“Do you want the Second-Grade True Art?”

“.Oh?”

Lü Yang’s eyes lit up slightly, realizing that he had finally gained Chong Guang’s recognition. The other party was no longer forcing things but had chosen to negotiate a deal with him.

He saw Chong Guang say in a deep voice:

“I know you’ve spoken with Miao Yin. She gave you the incomplete version of the 『Universal Supreme Divine Art of Qian Heaven’s Origin Commanding All Heavens』, but she didn’t give you the crucial 【Qi Harvesting Method】. There’s also that Ye Guyue from the Sword Pavilion. She also has a Second-Grade True Art. You want them, don’t you?”

“I can give them to you!”

Chong Guang said indifferently: “Give me one-third of your karmic merits and fate, and I can give you the complete version of the 『Universal Supreme Divine Art of Qian Heaven’s Origin Commanding All Heavens』 right now.”

“Afterward, I will also specially leave behind a fragment of the Blessed Land.”

“Next time I ascend the Blessed Land, I will put you and that Ye Guyue from the Sword Pavilion together. She is currently depleted of fate and will not be your match.”

“At the same time, I will seal the Blessed Land to ensure she cannot escape.”

“By then, you can freely harvest her as you wish.”

Hearing this, Lü Yang immediately fell silent.

He had to admit that Chong Guang’s proposal was extremely tempting. After all, his greatest goal on this trip was to—no, to obtain the Second-Grade True Art.

“But Uncle-Master, how can I trust that you will keep your word?”

Before Lü Yang finished speaking, he saw Chong Guang raise his hand and throw out a beam of dazzling light. Scanning it with his divine sense, it was indeed the complete

version of the 『Universal Supreme Divine Art of Qian Heaven's Origin Commanding All Heavens』 !

“With this, even if I break my word, you won't have lost out.”

“.Very well!”

Seeing this, Lü Yang finally made his decision. He had no intention of pushing things too far. The threat had only been to gain benefits; there was no point in fighting to the death.

With this in mind, he no longer resisted Chong Guang's absorption of his karmic fate.

Chong Guang did not play any tricks, taking only one-third of Lü Yang's karmic merits and fate before turning his attention back to the 【Life Exchange Fate Changing Talisman Book】 .

Lifting the brush, he wrote the final character: 【Yang】

【I can make Chen Earth return to Yang】 !

“Boom!”

In an instant, the mighty power of the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 resonated with heaven and earth, crashing down upon Chong Guang, and then, centered on him, began to expand outward in all directions!

Previously, Chong Guang had merely altered the attribute of the 【Chen Earth】 in his possession back to Yang Earth. But now, through the power of the Fruit Position treasure, he was extending this reversal to the entire world! He was clearly attempting to change all the 【Chen Earth】 in heaven and earth from Yin Earth back to Yang Earth!

“Fight once more!”

Chong Guang's voice resounded in all directions. In an instant, everyone, including Lü Yang, was thrown out of the Blessed Land, which once again began to rise into the sky!

However, at that very moment—

“Whoosh whoosh!”

Clouds and mist filled the sky as purple qi came from the east.

In the blink of an eye, the vast purple qi surged like an endless river, stretching across the north and south, forcibly cutting off Chong Guang's path of ascension!

And what followed was a thunderous rebuke like a bolt from the blue:

“Seeking death!”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 240: The Hope of Seizing the 【City Wall Earth】!

[1,311 words]

A single light reprimand rang out. It was not a hysterical curse, but its weight was overwhelming, as if two great mountains had come crashing down on the hearts of all who heard it.

Immediately after—

“Rumble rumble rumble!”

The great river of purple qi that stretched from north to south suddenly split apart. One became two, two became three, and three gave birth to all things, spreading out into a web-like network of cracks.

In the next moment, those cracks turned into real, tangible rifts, tearing open the entire river of purple qi. And beyond the split purple qi, a pair of enormous eyes appeared, as if they occupied the entire sky. They were icy cold and emotionless, gazing down upon the world from above!

“Thud!”

In an instant, countless mortals and even Qi Refining cultivators collapsed to their knees, prostrating themselves without stop, unable to withstand the gaze of those eyes.

Only Foundation Establishment cultivators could barely manage to stay standing.

Even so, Lü Yang still felt an overwhelming pressure crashing down on him, falling upon his Sea of Consciousness, making him instinctively want to kneel.

‘What the hell is this!?’

Lü Yang was shaken to his core. It wasn’t like he had never seen a Golden Core True Lord make a move before—he had seen it twice. But not once had it left him this shocked!

After all, Golden Core True Lords still retained a somewhat human-like appearance. Even though their dharma bodies towered into the sky, they were still shaped like humans, just larger—comprehensible, in a way.

Yet the eyes that now appeared in the heavens had already completely transcended the human form!

In the next moment, the purple qi eyes slowly focused their gaze.

Immediately, that indescribably vast pressure crashed down onto Chong Guang’s body. With just one glance, the flying Chong Guang seemed to suffer a heavy blow.

“Crack!”

The 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 , already reduced to just its core, shattered into countless cracks and seemed on the verge of being crushed by that gaze!

The difference in level was simply too vast.

But just at that moment, a heavy snowfall suddenly began to drift down from the heavens. A warm, jade-like hand suddenly pressed down onto the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 .

“Boom!”

The jade hand radiated divine light, and with unstoppable might, it instantly compressed the shattered 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 back together, smoothing out all its cracks.

Qingcheng Feixue True Lord!

At that moment, the infamous madwoman of the Primordial Saint Sect appeared with an excited expression, looking up at the purple qi eyes in the sky without the slightest trace of fear.

“So it really is Late Stage!”

As her words fell, a crimson light suddenly appeared in her beautiful eyes.

Then, she turned to look at Chong Guang and coldly ordered:

“You continue.”

Chong Guang True Person did not respond. Instead, he pushed forward with all his strength, reversing the 【Chen Earth】 and slowly ascending toward the direction of the 【Overturned Lantern Flame】 .

“I want to see for myself if it’s really Ang Xiao!”

As soon as these words were spoken, True Lords from the Dao Court, Pure Land, Sword Pavilion, and Overseas all disappeared from their positions, replaced by the sudden brightening of stars in the heavens!

Every star that lit up represented a fruit position!

At that moment, all cultivators in the world felt the resonance. The falling starlight descended like chains, directly locking onto the purple qi eyes.

Under the oppression of this starlight, the vast river of purple qi that had stretched across the heavens began to shrink, retracting and converging. In the end, it condensed into an illusory figure. Its face was indistinct, its gender unrecognizable, and from it came a soft chuckle that seemed neither male nor female, neither old nor young:

“Why bother?”

This soft laugh was completely different from the earlier icy “seeking death”. It was no longer cold and indifferent, but carried a genuine human emotion.

In the next second, the world dimmed.

All karma and heavenly secrets were obscured in that moment. Nothing could be seen, not even Foundation Establishment cultivators could discern the battle occurring in the heavens.

‘Unbelievable, truly unbelievable.’

Lü Yang lowered his head, two lines of blood tears streaming from his eyes—this was the price of having directly gazed at the battlefield. But thanks to this, he had clearly seen one thing.

‘At least ten!’

Besides Qingcheng Feixue True Lord, the Primordial Saint Sect had another mysterious True Lord taking action. Meanwhile, the Pure Land, Dao Court, Sword Pavilion, and Overseas each had their own True Lord manifesting.

More than ten in total!

‘But... this is also my chance! With all heavenly secrets hidden, no one will be able to deduce what happens here afterward. This is the perfect opportunity for murder and robbery!’

In that instant, Lü Yang thought of many things.

It was obvious that the mysterious powerhouse who had reversed the 【Chen Earth】 had instantly become the target of all forces. No one was willing to let him go.

However, correspondingly—

‘The forces of all factions must be somewhat empty right now!’

Even the Pure Land!

At that moment, Lü Yang suddenly had a bold thought:

‘After a few more lifetimes, if I can seize this perfect opportunity, is it possible to take advantage of the Pure Land’s weakness... to extract the 【City Wall Earth】 fruit position?’

Although the Pure Land still had Dao Lords stationed there, the Primordial Saint Sect wasn’t without its own Dao Lords. The two would cancel each other out. What would be left to deal with would merely be the Bodhisattvas of the Pure Land.

If a daring True Lord was willing to cooperate, there might be a real chance to extract the 【City Wall Earth】 !

‘But this can’t be rushed.’

Snatching the 【City Wall Earth】 would benefit the Primordial Saint Sect. Surely some True Lord would be willing to make the move, but Lü Yang had to demonstrate enough value—he needed to at least reach the peak of Foundation Establishment.

‘It would be best if I could immediately seek to form a Golden Core after snatching it.’

‘The 【City Wall Earth】 has been trapped for so long. As a hidden fruit position, and with me being the only one cultivating the related techniques, it would hardly reject me in any way.’

The difficulty all lay with the Pure Land.

But thinking from another angle, as long as the Pure Land’s forces could be neutralized and the 【City Wall Earth】 could be snatched, he would almost certainly become a True Lord, with even greater prospects than Chong Guang!

‘Even if I can’t take it out, as long as I get my hands on it—even if it remains in the Pure Land—I can simply start over and bring the fruit position back with me!’

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt his mind clearing up.

‘Chong Guang Martial Uncle, you’ve done well!’

If it weren’t for Chong Guang True Person’s attempt to form a Golden Core and stirring up the reversal of the 【Chen Earth】 , he would have had no choice but to give up on the 【City Wall Earth】 in the future.

But now, things had taken a new turn!

When he reached the peak of Foundation Establishment in the future, this could very well be a new path toward Golden Core! Although fraught with danger, the rewards would be equally rich if successful!

Just then, Lü Yang suddenly felt the void tremble. The next thing he knew, he found himself back in the Blessed Land... no, on a fragment of the Blessed Land. On the other side, he saw a sword light descending from the sky.

Chong Guang had actually kept his promise and sent Ye Guyue over!

However, Lü Yang soon frowned.

“She’s not alone...”

In addition to Ye Guyue, several other escape lights had followed and landed within the fragment of the Blessed Land as well.

Realizing this, Lü Yang immediately refocused his mind. He once again used the 【Star Concealing Radiance】 to mask his presence and quietly crept closer.

“...Let’s take care of business first!”

Ye Guyue still carried a second-grade true technique on her, and to fully leverage his peerless intelligence, the more reference materials he had, the better!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,637 words]

Chapter 241: The Tyranny of the Sword Pavilion

Within the fragment of the blessed land, Ye Guyue stood with a heavy expression, glancing around. As she recalled her previous experiences, she couldn't help but clench her silver teeth tightly, hatred flashing in her eyes:

“Damn demon...!”

Since entering the blessed land, nothing had gone smoothly for her.

First, during the contest for the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , she had been forced to retreat by Lü Yang and Sui Ying, who had joined forces against her. She had no choice but to use her trump card to escape, suffering considerable injuries in the process.

After finally recovering from her wounds and casually picking up a few spiritual materials within the blessed land, she had been driven to the center of the fragment by Chong Guang due to the collapse of the blessed land. There, Chong Guang had seized nearly all of her merit and fortune. What was even worse was that she had been unable to resist, leaving her feeling utterly humiliated.

What made it even more unbearable was that she could not afford to show her anger.

Thinking of this, Ye Guyue hurriedly formed a hand seal, doing her best to steady her mind: “Calm down... Reckless anger taints the spiritual platform. My heart is as firm as steel.”

By relying on secret arts to suppress her emotions, Ye Guyue managed to maintain her composure.

However, while she could suppress it, the other two who had fallen into this blessed land fragment with her had already been deeply affected by the calamity's aura, unable to remain calm.

The next moment, two streams of light flew rapidly toward her.

One of them radiated with treasure light, further enhanced by Buddhist light. When the figure within revealed himself, it was none other than Duo Bao Tongzi, who had narrowly escaped death during the great battle in the 【Kingdom of Qing】 .

It had to be said, this man indeed had some measure of luck.

In the entire 【Kingdom of Qing】 , only he and the Five Elements True Person had originated from Jiangbei's cultivators. However, the Five Elements True Person had fully pledged allegiance to Jiangdong and had received an official position early on.

Thus, he had been sacrificed along with the others by Chong Guang.

On the other hand, Duo Bao Tongzi, having taken refuge in the Pure Land Sect without receiving any official rank, had narrowly survived that grand sacrificial ritual. He had even managed to visit the 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 afterward.

As for the title “Duo Bao” (Many Treasures), it truly fit him. Relying on his ancestral treasure-seeking techniques, he had actually managed to obtain a great opportunity.

At that time, there had been four spiritual embryos within the blessed land. Lü Yang had secured the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , and two of the remaining three had been taken by members of the Dao Court and the Pure Land Sect. Originally, if Ye Guyue hadn't been injured, the fourth would have belonged to the Sword Pavilion. However, since Ye Guyue had gone into hiding, Duo Bao Tongzi had ended up benefiting.

Yet, as the saying goes: “An innocent man gets into trouble because of his treasures.”

Right behind Duo Bao Tongzi, another stream of light swiftly followed, filled with sharp sword energy. From within it stepped a solemn and dignified middle-aged man.

“Duo Bao Daoist, are you still so obstinate?”

“Yun Zhiqiu!” Duo Bao Tongzi gritted his teeth in hatred upon seeing him. “I am now considered a righteous cultivator. Is the Sword Pavilion really going to resort to such forceful plundering?”

“What kind of righteous cultivator do you think you are?”

The middle-aged man, Yun Zhiqiu, let out a loud laugh upon hearing this. “A demon cultivator from Jiangbei, turning to the light is just the beginning. You still have many sins to atone for!”

“What sins do I have?” Duo Bao Tongzi retorted angrily. “My Fenbao Cliff in Jiangbei has never conducted blood sacrifices on commoners. As for sect rivalries, life and death are common occurrences, each relying on their own abilities. What sins can there be? Before I came to the 【Kingdom of Qing】 , I had accumulated plenty of merit!”

“Being from Jiangbei is your greatest sin!”

Yun Zhiqiu sneered coldly. “Treasures of the world belong to those of virtue. Do you think a demon cultivator from Jiangbei deserves them? I have no interest in arguing with you. Are you handing over the spiritual embryo or not?”

“You...”

For a moment, Duo Bao Tongzi felt his anger rising uncontrollably. Though Yun Zhiqiu was formidable, his strength relied heavily on a sharp magical sword.

If they were to truly fight, Yun Zhiqiu was merely at the early Foundation Establishment Realm.

With his own cultivation, suppressing Yun Zhiqiu would be easy. He had only refrained from doing so due to Yun Zhiqiu's status in the Sword Pavilion. But now, there was no need to hold back.

“Clang clang!”

In the next moment, the sound of a sword's hum shattered all of Duo Bao Tongzi's malicious intent. Turning around, he saw Ye Guyue arriving on her sword, suspended above his head.

‘It's over!’

In an instant, Duo Bao Tongzi felt a wave of cold despair in his heart. On the surface, however, he dared not show any disrespect and hurriedly bowed:

“Duo Bao greets Sword Pavilion's Fairy Ye.”

On the other side, Yun Zhiqiu was overjoyed and respectfully greeted, “Greetings, Martial Aunt Ye.”

He immediately pointed at Duo Bao Tongzi and righteously declared, “It was this man who took the 【Immortal Tree of Eternal Youth】. Martial Aunt, please uphold justice!”

Upon hearing this, Ye Guyue cast a glance at Duo Bao Tongzi. With a quick calculation, she instantly grasped the situation and spoke in a deep voice:

“Since you are all righteous cultivators, internal strife should be avoided. Now that we are trapped in this fragment of the blessed land, it is likely the work of that demon. We should join forces against our common enemy. How can we let discord arise among us?”

Her words sounded grand and righteous.

Duo Bao Tongzi let out a sigh of relief, thinking that the Sword Pavilion, after all, still upheld reason. Who would have thought that the next second, Ye Guyue would turn to him and say:

“Duo Bao Daoist, hand over the 【Immortal Tree of Eternal Youth】.”

Ye Guyue spoke solemnly, “Junior Brother Yun is only at the early Foundation Establishment Realm and urgently needs a spiritual material for protection. You, on the other hand, are at the mid-Foundation Establishment Realm and are not lacking such a material.”

Who the hell doesn't lack it!

Duo Bao Tongzi remained silent for a moment before replying in a low voice:

"To tell the truth, I lost most of my treasures in the 【Kingdom of Qing】. I truly need a spiritual material for protection."

However, Ye Guyue merely shook her head:

"Duo Bao Daoist, forgive me for speaking bluntly. Since you have already joined the righteous path, you should understand the law of cause and effect. You come from a small sect with ordinary background, while Junior Brother Yun is a cultivator of my Sword Pavilion. Between the two, which is more important? You should be able to weigh it in your heart."

"If you lose this spiritual material, at most you are just a small sect cultivator. If you die, you die."

"But if Junior Brother Yun lacks this spiritual material, it could cost him his life. The death of one Sword Pavilion cultivator is a tremendous loss for the righteous path."

"Therefore, for the sake of the righteous path, for the sake of the people of the world, you should not be stubborn."

"If you feel resentful, I can make the decision. Should you die because of this, in your next life you may enter my Sword Pavilion to cultivate. Consider it a stroke of fortune for you."

Upon hearing this, Duo Bao Tongzi fell silent once more.

"What now? Are you still being obstinate?"

Ye Guyue's brows furrowed slightly, her beautiful eyes showing displeasure. "Are you really going to put your personal interests above the righteous path and defy the will of the people?"

As soon as she finished speaking, her sword intent locked onto Duo Bao Tongzi.

"...I dare not."

At this moment, Duo Bao Tongzi felt nothing but bitterness and rage. Yet, he couldn't help but recall the time in Jiangbei when he had been knocked out and robbed by a True Person from the Sacred Sect.

He never imagined that before he had pledged himself to the righteous path, he had been robbed; and after pledging himself to the righteous path, he was still being robbed!

Had he not joined in vain?

At least the True Person from the Sacred Sect had relied on his own strength to rob him. He hadn't expected the Sword Pavilion to be even more overbearing, demanding not only his treasure but also his willing submission!

Yet, unable to resist under such pressure, Duo Bao Tongzi could only sigh. He reached into his sleeve and threw out a ball of spiritual light, which was indeed the 【Immortal Tree of Eternal Youth】 , formed from Jia Wood. It could be refined into a spiritual treasure or used in alchemy to enhance one's Wood-element Dao attainment.

Only then did Ye Guyue nod in satisfaction.

Meanwhile, Yun Zhiqiu eagerly stepped forward to take the 【Immortal Tree of Eternal Youth】 , joyfully injecting his spiritual power to refine it on the spot.

“This place is not safe.”

Ye Guyue shifted her gaze and continued her calculations. She then pointed in a direction and said, “The way out should be there. We had best leave quickly.”

Soon, three streams of light soared into the sky.

Before long, a towering mountain appeared in their sight. Arrays of light swirled on the mountain, tightly anchoring the fragment of the blessed land.

At the mountain's peak, a relaxed figure sat cross-legged, laughing aloud:

“Fairy Ye, I have been waiting for you for quite some time.”

“It's you!?”

In an instant, the previously composed Ye Guyue's expression shifted. She clearly recognized Lü Yang sitting on the mountain, and murderous intent burst forth from her beautiful eyes!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 242 : "This Grandpa Submits to the Primordial Saint Sect!"

[1,468 words]

Chapter 242: "This Grandpa Submits to the Primordial Saint Sect!"

Lü Yang was not in a hurry to seek out Ye Guyue.

After all, Ye Guyue's strength was not weak. The reason he had managed to injure and repel her last time was largely thanks to Sui Ying's interference, which allowed him to launch a successful sneak attack amid the chaos.

Now that Sui Ying was no longer holding her back, and with Ye Guyue already aware of his 【Star Concealment Radiance】 divine ability, she would surely be on guard. It would be difficult to achieve another victory. So rather than actively pursuing Ye Guyue, Lü Yang shifted his focus to this fragment of the blessed land, planning to lie in wait like a hunter by the tree.

As expected, things unfolded just as he had anticipated.

"This fragment of the blessed land is also gradually collapsing. It's just that True Person Chong Guang used great power to stabilize it, making it much firmer than other fragments."

Its nature was the same as the previous fragments.

As time passed, the edges would begin to collapse first, followed by a gradual implosion toward the center, forcing everyone to converge toward that area.

"The exit is also located at the center."

With this in mind, Lü Yang's objective became simple.

He immediately summoned 【Mountain of Embrace】 and firmly suppressed it at the exit of the blessed land fragment. Then, he began to set up formations in the surrounding area.

In this way, Ye Guyue would have only two choices if she wished to leave the blessed land fragment: either forcefully break through the boundary, which would certainly trigger the fragment's backlash and prove to be more loss than gain, or face Lü Yang in direct combat, kill him, and then safely exit through the gateway.

Lü Yang actually preferred that she chose the first option.

Because if she did, she would inevitably be gravely injured afterward. Lü Yang could then pursue and capture her with a tenfold certainty of success.

However, Ye Guyue had clearly considered this as well.

"Forcefully breaking through is not viable. The only urgent task now is to break the formation!"

Her beautiful eyes gleamed coldly as she stared intently at Lü Yang standing atop the mountain. She felt her sword heart and sword intent sounding alarms, making her delicate body tremble slightly.

Had it been anyone else, she might have already drawn her sword and struck. Yet, facing Lü Yang, Ye Guyue remained calm. Moreover, formations borrowed the power of heaven and earth to let the weak overcome the strong. Lü Yang's cultivation was already comparable to hers, and recklessly charging into a formation carried far too much risk.

With this in mind, Ye Guyue immediately turned her gaze.

"Fellow Daoist Duo Bao, I must trouble you to make the attempt."

At these words, Duo Bao Tongzi was instantly dumbfounded. He quickly shook his head.

"With my meager cultivation, entering the formation would surely be certain death!"

"This is precisely your destined opportunity."

Ye Guyue nodded and spoke as if it were only natural.

"To die breaking the formation for us is a deed of the highest merit. In your next life, I shall grant you a position as a true disciple."

"..."

Duo Bao Tongzi felt a surge of anger. What use did he have for a true disciple's position? His Dao had already been set, and it was impossible for him to build his foundation using the Sword Pavilion's methods!

To truly integrate into the Sword Pavilion and become a direct disciple, he would have to wait until his fifth lifetime, when his soul and spirit had been completely cleansed by the cycle of reincarnation. But by that time, he would no longer be himself, merely a new consciousness. What meaning would that have for him?

Thinking of this, Duo Bao Tongzi immediately spoke.

"If I am to enter the formation, return the **【Everlasting Spring】** to me. With this spiritual material for protection, I might have some chance of survival in the formation."

"What a joke!"

Upon hearing this, Yun Zhiqiu immediately voiced his displeasure.

"Spiritual materials are one thing, this is another. How can Fellow Daoist confuse the two?"

"You are now one of the righteous path. Naturally, you must shoulder the duty of eliminating demons and defending the Dao!"

Duo Bao Tongzi countered immediately.

"Then why don't you go, Fellow Daoist?"

What a joke, how could he possibly go?

Yun Zhiqiu knew perfectly well that Lü Yang's name was like thunder in his ears, for it had been Lü Yang who killed his family's ancestor!

Thinking back, his ancestor had sacrificed himself but was still slain by Lü Yang. Later, their clan's genius Yun Miaozen had also died in the Dao Struggle battlefield. The Yun family had been on the brink of collapse. Had it not been for his accidental fortune and breakthrough to Foundation Establishment, the Yun family might have long since perished.

Given all that, how could he dare to confront Lü Yang?

"My cultivation is still too low!"

Yun Zhiqiu said in a deep voice,

"Even if I were to die in the formation, I wouldn't be able to test its power. But if you go, it will be a different matter."

Hearing this, Duo Bao Tongzi fell silent.

He had no choice but to turn to Ye Guyue.

"Fellow Daoist, are you truly sending me into the formation empty-handed?"

Ye Guyue paused to consider, then shook her head.

"If I lend you the 【Everlasting Spring】 and you die, wouldn't that mean losing the spiritual material as well?"

"In that case, it would not only fail to break the formation but also benefit the enemy."

With this thought, Ye Guyue made her decision.

"Fellow Daoist, go in empty-handed. If you die, it matters not. I will naturally help you return in the future."

"...Very well."

Duo Bao Tongzi said no more. He turned, summoned a ray of light, and flew into the 【Mountain of Embrace】. Upon finding the formation gate, he charged in without hesitation.

Seeing this, Lü Yang immediately smiled.

"Isn't this Fellow Daoist Duo Bao? It's been a long time."

"Yuan Tu..." Duo Bao Tongzi's expression was equally complicated.

As his voice fell, the 【Myriad Spirit Banner】 appeared in his hand. With a vigorous shake, spiritual lights surged in all directions, and countless banner spirits emerged, occupying the formation's core points.

"【Heaven-Filling Blood Sea Formation】!"

In the next moment, a sea of interwoven blood-red light appeared, forming wave after wave, vast and boundless, turning into a raging blood sea!

Once this formation was deployed, it did not rely on any subtle changes but simply overwhelmed with sheer volume. The endless blood waves would suppress and extinguish the mana of those who entered. If Lü Yang powered it solely with his own mana, there might be limits. However, he had siphoned a portion of the blessed land fragment's power to sustain the formation.

Thus, the formation's operation consumed the fragment's power, leaving Lü Yang's own mana untouched, while those who entered had to fight against the boundless blood sea. Under such an imbalance, how could anyone be his match?

Not to mention, he had reinforced the formation with 【Mountain of Embrace】.

Therefore, though each wave appeared thin, it carried the weight of mountains and rivers, suppressing spiritual energy. Without exhausting one's mana, escape was impossible.

And that was not all.

Lü Yang took out the 【Three-Nine Soul-Dissolving Gourd】 from his waist, held it in his hand, and activated it with his mana, then placed it at the formation's center.

In the next moment, rolling smoke billowed out from the gourd.

【Soul-Dissolving Spirit-Scattering Divine Smoke】 !

With the addition of this smoke, the blood waves gained an extra power that shook the soul, making it even more disastrous for those inside.

Seeing this, Duo Bao Tongzi hesitated no longer.

He immediately knelt on the ground, raised both hands, withdrew his mana, and shouted loudly,

"I, Duo Bao, am willing to surrender to the Primordial Saint Sect!"

"I beg the lord to show mercy and spare my life!"

Who was Duo Bao Tongzi? Back then, he had held a lifelong grudge after being robbed by a True Person of the Saint Sect. Nothing angered him more than being robbed.

And now, having once again been robbed by the Sword Pavilion, his heart was already filled with bitter hatred. Moreover, his merits and destiny had been completely stripped by Chong Guang, leaving him no time to recover or rebuild. If he died here, it would take him at least three to five lifetimes to start over.

Why continue fighting? This grandpa surrenders to the Primordial Saint Sect!

Even Lü Yang had not expected such a straightforward surrender, but he was more than happy to accept it. He burst into laughter.

"Fellow Daoist's willingness to submit is indeed the greatest good!"

Outside the formation, Ye Guyue's beautiful face immediately darkened upon seeing this.

She simply could not comprehend why Duo Bao Tongzi would defect. Hadn't she already promised him a connection to the Sword Pavilion? That was a fortune countless people dreamed of.

In the end, she could only coldly snort.

"...Truly a demon from Jiangbei, unable to change his wicked nature!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 243 : Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword Art!

[1,624 words]

Chapter 243: Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword Art!

Inside the fragment of the blessed land.

Only to see Ye Guyue's beautiful eyes turning cold as she gazed at the black mountain and sea of blood before her, finally making a decision. "Zhiqiu, follow me to break the formation."

Although Duo Bao Tongzi had chosen to surrender and they had not managed to probe out much information, Lü Yang had at least demonstrated several layers of the formation's changes. Ye Guyue had taken note of all of it and believed she had the means to break the formation. Her expression quickly regained its calm, and she directly summoned a streak of escape light and flew into the formation!

"Good timing!"

Lü Yang smiled at the sight, shook the banner, and activated the blood sea to suppress her. Yet, Ye Guyue casually removed a treasure bead from her dress.

".Go!"

With a flick of her wrist, she tossed the bead into the blood sea. In an instant, dazzling light erupted from it, and like a whale gulping down the sea, it swallowed all the blood waves completely!

As the blood sea continuously poured in, the originally clear and white bead gradually took on a blood-red hue, and its aura grew increasingly ferocious.

Seeing this, Lü Yang raised an eyebrow and immediately halted the blood sea's suppression. He had already figured out Ye Guyue's tactic. This bead could absorb external energies, and she was clearly waiting for it to gather enough of the blood sea before detonating it, using his own method against him to break the formation in one strike!

As for the 【Soul-Stealing Smoke】 in the blood sea, it was not even worth mentioning.

Ye Guyue only needed to maintain her sword heart. No matter what methods he used to shake her soul, she could easily cut through them with her sword intent, rendering them completely ineffective.

“Good tactic.”

Lü Yang’s expression remained indifferent as he unhooked the Wasp Pouch from his waist and released billions of Qi-Eating Worms, merging them into the blood sea and surging toward Ye Guyue.

Ye Guyue responded by using the bead once again.

However, this time, after absorbing part of the blood sea, cracks began to appear on the bead. Looking closely, one could clearly see it was densely covered with countless tiny insects!

“Qi-Eating Worms.”

Ye Guyue frowned slightly, having deduced the origin of the insects. Lü Yang had mixed these demonic insects into the blood sea, greatly reducing the bead’s capacity to absorb it.

With every wave of blood it absorbed, the bead had to endure another layer of gnawing from the Qi-Eating Worms. As a result, the bead was on the verge of being damaged before its power could accumulate to the limit. But if she detonated it prematurely, its power would not be enough to shatter the formation, making it a futile effort.

What was even more troublesome was...

“Whoosh—!”

The next second, a silent and invisible sword light suddenly struck toward Ye Guyue’s back. The unstoppable sword edge was about to kill her on the spot!

【Invisible Sword】 !

This sword, designed specifically for assassination, was something Lü Yang wielded with great familiarity. Naturally, he had not held it back, hiding it in the blood sea, waiting for the right moment!

In an instant, a loud metallic clash resounded as a dazzling divine light blossomed. In the nick of time, a magical sword blocked the attack.

Lü Yang looked over and saw that the sword’s glow was extremely bizarre, devoid of any righteous aura. Instead, it reflected a seductive, naked woman whose silver-bell-like laughter echoed. The sound fell upon the **【Invisible Sword】** , even causing Lü Yang’s divine sense to waver slightly.

“This thing... A demon corpse? Or a banner spirit?”

Lü Yang's expression turned strange as he withdrew the 【Invisible Sword】 and chuckled. "I didn't expect that the righteous leader of the Sword Pavilion would also use the methods of our Holy Sect?"

"Demon of Jiangbei, how do you recognize the profound arts of my Sword Pavilion?"

Ye Guyue replied coldly, "This sword art was derived from the aura of the 【Divine Weapon Realm】 , ranked as a second-grade art. Though it exudes demonic energy, it is the righteous path of controlling demons!"

Almost simultaneously, Lü Yang felt a surge of danger.

The next moment, the 【Perilous Concealing Black Cloak】 on his body radiated with brilliant light, and seven sword edges pierced through the void, aiming straight for his vital points!

"Crack!"

The protective divine light shattered in an instant. However, Lü Yang had already vanished from his original spot and appeared in the distance, observing with great interest.

The seven sword edges that had just attacked him each had a seductive, smiling, yet ghostly figure behind them. Their forms were illusionary and hard to grasp. In just the blink of an eye, they vanished again, passing through Lü Yang's formation without the slightest hindrance!

" 【Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword Art】 !"

Ye Guyue formed a sword seal, and eight magical swords immediately materialized around her. In a flash, they shot toward Lü Yang once more.

"An excellent sword art, but... not yet perfected?"

Lü Yang let out a loud laugh. His Celestial Compass between his brows spun, and under the illumination of his divine eye, he quickly discerned the nature of the swords. All eight demonic swords were merely split offspring swords.

In their maneuvers, there was still a slight flaw.

"The number nine is the ultimate. You should have nine swords. When the nine offspring swords merge into the mother sword, that is when your sword art becomes truly formidable."

"Why haven't you completed it? Oh, I see, I destroyed one of them earlier."

Lü Yang recalled how Ye Guyue had escaped from his and Sui Ying's joint attack. His expression suddenly turned to realization.

On the other side, Ye Guyue's expression grew heavier. She had already done her utmost to conceal her causal traces to prevent Lü Yang from deducing her details. Yet, he had still unraveled the roots of her 【Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword Art】. Such uncanny divination ability was clearly beyond reason. Did this man possess a treasure related to fate?

'This is bad...'

A trace of gloom rose in Ye Guyue's heart. As Lü Yang had said, her sword art was indeed missing one Heavenly Demon Sword Spirit at this moment.

Without it, she could not form the sword array.

If this continued...

'...Am I going to lose?'

At this thought, Ye Guyue bit her lip, unwilling to admit it, yet Lü Yang's strength had clearly exceeded her expectations.

'Unless I can replace the last Heavenly Demon Sword Spirit.'

Thinking of this, Ye Guyue glanced toward Duo Bao Tongzi. She had originally planned to sacrifice him to complete her sword art.

That was why she had intended to send Duo Bao Tongzi to his death earlier. However, Duo Bao Tongzi had surrendered too quickly, denying her the chance. Now, while clashing with Lü Yang, she had no spare energy to kill Duo Bao Tongzi. After considering it over and over, the only available option seemed to be...

Ye Guyue shifted her gaze to Yun Zhiqiu beside her.

The cold indifference in her beautiful eyes made Yun Zhiqiu shudder and whisper, "...Martial Aunt?"

"Zhiqiu, this too is your destined fate."

"Huh?"

Before Yun Zhiqiu could react, a sword light pierced through his body, beheading him. His flesh, blood, and cultivation were all devoured completely.

A stunned soul emerged from the spot.

“Zhiqiu, you have rendered great service this time. In your next life, seek me out, and I will grant you a fortune.” Ye Guyue spoke calmly, her tone flat and indifferent.

To the Sword Pavilion, death was not the end.

Reincarnation was but the norm.

However, in the next moment, Yun Zhiqiu’s face turned to terror. If it were just ordinary reincarnation, it might have been fine... But right now, he was in a state of depleted fortune and merit!

Reincarnating in this condition meant he would have to spend three to five lifetimes as a beast or livestock before he could return as a human. By then, the five-lifetime lifespan of Foundation Establishment would have long been exhausted. Moreover, he was only at the early stage of Foundation Establishment. Even if he somehow managed to make it through, breaking the mystery of the womb would be near impossible. What difference would that be from having his cultivation ruined?

Yet, he could not utter a single word.

In just a blink, Yun Zhiqiu’s soul, filled with unwillingness, fell into the cycle of reincarnation. Immediately afterward, Ye Guyue summoned the ninth Heavenly Demon Sword Spirit.

“Demon, you have caused my junior brother’s death. Today, I shall execute you!”

Ye Guyue’s gaze blazed like a torch. The nine Heavenly Demon Sword Spirits each wielded a sword, merging as one. Two innate divine powers further empowered them, vastly increasing their might.

【Master of Armament】 !

【Radiant Gold Glory】 !

“What a magnificent sword...” Lü Yang exclaimed in admiration.

In an instant, a sword light blazed like a flame. Wherever it passed, the blood sea evaporated. The sharpness of the sword intent even made Lü Yang’s forehead sting.

Yet in the next moment, he smiled.

“However, my sword is no less sharp!”

As his words fell, Lü Yang had already drawn out the Abyss Sword from his sleeve. It radiated with blood light, clearly having been prepared for this moment. A piercing sword cry rang out!

Within the fragment of the blessed land, a blood-colored rainbow shot into the sky.

The 【Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 followed closely, slashing toward him one sword after another!

For a moment, the sky above resounded with a series of explosions. Massive mushroom clouds intertwined with blazing fire and lightning, as if tearing the entire fragment apart!

“Boom!”

This clash completely shattered the 【Heaven-Obscuring Blood Sea Grand Formation】. Ye Guyue watched in shock as her 【Nine Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 let out a mournful cry and, disregarding her commands, turned into light and flew back into her sleeve, refusing to be wielded any further!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,545 words]

Chapter 244: Ye Guyue! Die!

“Ah Bi Sword has suffered considerable damage.”

After putting away the Ah Bi Sword into his sleeve, Lü Yang's eyes revealed a trace of amazement. "So this is the Sword Pavilion's second-grade true technique? 【Nine Progeny Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword Art】."

How he wished he could have it!

It was no wonder Lü Yang was so covetous.

After all, if they truly went head-to-head, the Ah Bi Sword actually could not compete with the 【Nine Progeny Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword】. It was not because the quality of the Ah Bi Sword was inferior.

It was because Ye Guyue was a sword cultivator.

She could empower her sword with both innate and bloodline divine abilities, causing its power to soar dramatically. Lü Yang, on the other hand, had to rely solely on the sword's own mystical properties.

Fortunately, before this duel, Lü Yang had used the 【Ah Bi Sword】 to kill several sword cultivators in succession, stacking the special attack bonus of 【Butcher of Men】 to an extremely high level, which offset Ye Guyue's advantage. Combined with the fact that he had been preparing for this moment for a long time, he barely managed to seize a slight upper hand.

And even this outcome was the result of multiple influencing factors.

After all, the Ah Bi Sword relied on stored energy and had only one strike's worth of power. If Ye Guyue had maintained clarity of mind, she could have chosen to engage in a drawn-out battle, dodging and circling him.

However, she chose to meet him head-on.

'In the end, her fortune and merit had been drained by Chong Guang, and calamity energy now entangled her!'

Even though she managed to maintain a clear mind using the Sword Pavilion's secret techniques, she still could not fully escape the influence, making slight misjudgments at critical moments.

If not for this, Lü Yang would have, at best, fought her to a draw. Killing her, let alone capturing her alive, would have been out of the question.

However, in the battles between cultivators, the only thing that mattered was the result.

And the result was—he had won!

“.”

In the next second, brilliant light flared across Ye Guyue's body, enveloping her completely. She was about to tear through the void and forcefully escape the fragment of the blessed land.

Clearly, Ye Guyue had already realized the situation.

She had lost, and if she did not flee now, she would die! Even if forcefully escaping the blessed land fragment would leave her seriously injured, she no longer cared.

But how could Lü Yang possibly let her escape?

“【Mountain Embrace】!”

In the next instant, his divine ability activated. A towering black mountain suppressed the spiritual energy, calming the void, and extinguished the brilliant light on Ye Guyue's body, pulling her back down.

Almost simultaneously, Lü Yang cast another spell.

“【Proper Law of Commanding Mountains and Moving Peaks】!”

He formed seals, chanted incantations, and pointed with his finger—three steps completed in one breath.

Although Ye Guyue reacted quickly, closing her seven apertures in the first instant to block out Lü Yang’s chanting and sealing actions, she still could not avoid being struck by his finger.

Immediately after, streams of muddy water erupted from her graceful body, turning her into an immobile mud statue in an instant.

The mud statue fell to the ground, taking root.

However, Lü Yang soon frowned and stopped his actions. With a casual flick, he shattered the mud statue, only to find it completely empty inside.

“Heh, Golden Cicada Shedding Its Shell?”

Lü Yang opened his third eye on his forehead. The Jiutian Instrument activated, and the light of Bing Fire illuminated the six directions, instantly revealing a graceful figure stealthily fleeing.

“Where do you think you’re going, Fairy?”

Lü Yang let out a loud laugh and immediately changed the seal of 【Mountain Embrace】. The towering mountain shadow materialized from the void and crashed down on Ye Guyue.

“Boom!”

In the next moment, Ye Guyue staggered.

She had been fleeing on her Sword Pill, but under the suppression of 【Mountain Embrace】, the previously responsive Sword Pill now reacted as if it had sunk into the sea—completely unresponsive.

Following that, the 【Proper Law of Commanding Mountains and Moving Peaks】 struck again.

Seeing this, Ye Guyue had no choice but to form seals once more, releasing another Heavenly Demon as a substitute, before fleeing a thousand miles away, clearly planning to drag things out.

'Hold on!'

'This blessed land... is about to completely shatter!'

At this moment, Ye Guyue's sword heart was clear. Even though calamity energy clung to her, she still grasped the last thread of hope. Once the blessed land shattered naturally, she would have a chance to survive!

With this in mind, Ye Guyue continued to flee with all her might.

And the disaster-avoiding ability of the 【Nine Progeny Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal-Slaying Sword】 was indeed remarkable, allowing her to narrowly evade Lü Yang's suppression seven times, miraculously enduring until now.

“Crack!”

Finally, a clear cracking sound echoed through the heavens and the earth.

The fragment of the blessed land, even though it had been held together by Chong Guang's power, could no longer bear the strain after so many collisions and finally shattered apart!

'This is it!'

Ye Guyue took a deep breath, mustered all her remaining power, and in the instant the fissure appeared in the blessed land, she rode a beam of escape light and vanished into the crack.

In the next moment, her vision suddenly expanded!

What entered her sight was the ruins of the 【Kingdom of Qing】 outside the blessed land. Several familiar cultivators were conversing nearby, some from the Dao Court, and some from the Pure Land.

The sky remained dim, clearly showing that the battle between True Lords had not yet ended.

But regardless—

'I'm finally out!'

Even with Ye Guyue's temperament, narrowly escaping death filled her with a hint of wild joy. She thought to herself, 'Demon, I will never let this go!'

But the most urgent matter now was to find someone to protect her!

With this thought, Ye Guyue immediately turned her gaze toward the Dao Court and Pure Land, about to call out for help, when suddenly she felt a mighty wave sweeping in from behind!

Turning her head—

The latest novel was first released at 69shu.com!

She saw the void cracking open, revealing the scene inside the blessed land fragment. On a towering mountain, Lü Yang sat cross-legged, his robes fluttering in the wind.

Above his head, one after another, divine lights appeared at this moment—【Myriad Spirits Banner】 , 【Ah Bi Sword】 , 【Formless Sword】 , 【Jiutian Instrument】 , 【Hundred-Forging Danger-Subduing Mystic Cloak】 , 【Jingping Clear Atmosphere Pagoda】 , 【Purple Star Official's Supreme Golden Seal】 , 【Imperial Mansion's Golden Script of Doushuai】 —eight supreme spiritual treasures resounded in unison!

In addition, there was a massive pile of treasures looted from Chong Ming.

These were all Chong Guang True Person's collection. Though none were supreme spiritual treasures, they were at least lower or middle-grade treasures, their quality far surpassing the mundane.

At this moment, all these treasures had gathered together.

And Lü Yang was forming seals with both hands, performing a Dao technique he had never used before.

“【Myriad Treasures River】 !”

Not far away, Duo Bao Tongzi, the rightful heir of the 【Myriad Treasures River】 , watched in stunned disbelief.

This technique was originally designed to win through sheer quantity, combining hundreds of magical treasures to unleash the power of a supreme spiritual treasure. Yet, in Lü Yang's hands, it had taken on an entirely different form.

All the components of his 【Myriad Treasures River】 were at least spiritual treasures!

At this moment, all the cultivators outside the blessed land felt darkness fall before their eyes, their Dharma bodies swaying as if they had become lone boats adrift in a raging storm!

What they saw before them was a vast, majestic river!

This river was massive and awe-inspiring, flowing out from the blessed land fragment with a thunderous roar, sweeping toward Ye Guyue.

Seeing this scene, everyone was simply incredulous. They felt that this overwhelming river, vast and unrestrained, was like an ocean surging forth. Just approaching it brought an indescribable suction force, like a sea whirlpool that threatened to swallow them and drag them to the bottom.

Ye Guyue's face instantly turned pale. "Help—"

"Run!"

Over at the Dao Court and Pure Land, several Foundation Establishment True Persons turned pale with shock. Without even glancing at Ye Guyue, they took off in escape light without a second thought.

In the next instant, the 【Myriad Treasures River】 came crashing down.

"Boom!"

With a deafening roar, Ye Guyue was swept up by the river formed of spiritual treasure light before everyone's eyes, her body wrapped and dragged back into the blessed land.

Was this the demon of the Primordial Saint Sect capturing the Sword Pavilion fairy?

Everyone looked at each other in dismay, still stunned, when a tender rebuke rang out from within the blessed land fragment beneath the cover of the 【Myriad Treasures River】 :

"Demon, how dare you!?"

Immediately after, Lü Yang's voice followed with hearty laughter. "Naïve. What wouldn't I dare? Today, I am determined to seize your second-grade true technique!"

"No, wait! Let me go!"

"Aren't you afraid of the Sword Pavilion's retaliation—"

"What technique do you want? I can tell you!"

Before Ye Guyue could finish, a cry of pain rang out, and Lü Yang's voice followed once more: "Tell me? What if you lie to me?"

"Uncle Master Chong Guang taught me that one must rely on oneself!"

“I trust only myself!”

Only the True Persons of the Saint Sect, after a brief moment of surprise, quickly regained their composure.

“Judging by the voice, it seems to be Yuan Tu?”

“Oh, then that’s no surprise.”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,403 words]

Chapter 245: The Secret of Second-Grade True Techniques

Three days later, Lü Yang finally stopped moving.

On the other side, Ye Guyue had collapsed on the ground like a puddle of mud. Her beautiful eyes were devoid of spirit, and from her mouth and nose, only faint breaths entered but none exited.

Nevertheless, the harvest was substantial.

Lü Yang sat cross-legged on the meditation cushion, silently examining the gains of the past three days. In his hands was a thick book, with several large characters written on its cover:

“ 『Divine Weapon Refinement Sword Dissolution Art』 ! ”

This sword art was none other than the Second-Grade True Technique held by Ye Guyue from the Sword Pavilion. It was also the foundation of her 【Ninefold Demon-Slaying Heavenly Mother Sword】 .

The key to this sword art lay in the word “Refinement”. It originated from a world governed by the Sword Pavilion called the 【Divine Weapon Realm】 . Sword Pavilion cultivators entered this realm to harvest the realm’s Qi. Each thread of Qi harvested would strengthen them a little. After reaching the peak, they could refine a flying sword that matched the nature of the harvested Qi.

However, this so-called Qi harvesting was not merely gathering spiritual energy.

The so-called 【Qi Harvesting】 was actually about seizing the essence of heaven and earth. This essence could be people, beasts, or rare treasures.

One seized these essences and fused them into oneself.

For example, Ye Guyue's 【Ninefold Demon-Slaying Heavenly Mother Sword】 was forged by her after she seized nine demon weapons in the 【Divine Weapon Realm】 and refined them with all her strength.

“But what does this have to do with proving the Golden Core?”

Lü Yang frowned slightly. He had understood the basic principle of a Second-Grade Technique, but some finer details were clearly still missing, lacking Ye Guyue's personal comprehension of the sword art.

Thinking of this, he immediately looked at Ye Guyue. “Looks like I'll have to go again.”

For the sake of his future path, Lü Yang did not hesitate. He immediately plunged into another intense and stimulating session of Dao-discussion. Very soon, another day passed—

“So that's how it is ! ”

Pushing Ye Guyue aside, Lü Yang revealed a look of enlightenment. “Second-Grade True Techniques, in essence, are still about proving the Fruit Position of this world ! ”

“The difference lies in the fact that Second-Grade True Techniques, through 【Qi Harvesting】 , seize the essence of other worlds, and then use this to prove the Golden Core. This is essentially a process of fusing the Fruit Positions of other worlds into one's own, which undeniably brings immense benefits to one's own world's Fruit Position.”

“Thus, it is easier to gain the favor of the Fruit Position ! ”

“When cultivating Second-Grade True Techniques, if one can reach the stage of seeking the Golden Core, one might not even need to perform any rituals. The Fruit Position will respond on its own and manifest itself.”

This was the advantage of Second-Grade Techniques.

Of course, cultivating Second-Grade Techniques might win the favor of one's own Fruit Position, but it would also invite the intense hostility of the Fruit Position of the external world from which the Qi was harvested.

This hostility not only made Qi harvesting extremely difficult but also constantly placed one's life in danger. It was as if the killing intent of heaven and earth could descend at any moment, and one might die in the external world if not careful. This was why, compared to the stable and safe Third-Grade True Techniques, Second-Grade True Techniques were generally neglected.

However, there was another factor.

As he thought about it, Lü Yang suddenly frowned. “Why did it stop again ?”

His memory had broken off once more.

It seemed that as the target’s cultivation improved, the effects of harvesting became weaker. Lü Yang felt somewhat helpless and could only make up for it with more attempts.

Another day passed.

After tossing the completely unconscious Ye Guyue aside, Lü Yang finally nodded in satisfaction.

“The other factor lies in the rarity of these worlds ! ”

“After all, not every world can give birth to a Fruit Position. Most worlds are like the old battlegrounds for Dao contention, easily crushed by True Lords.”

Lü Yang sighed in amazement. “Unbelievable.”

If Second-Grade True Techniques were already like this, what about First-Grade True Techniques?

If Second-Grade Techniques corresponded to worlds with Golden Core Fruit Positions, then did First-Grade Techniques correspond to worlds with Nascent Soul Dao Lords?

If so, it would explain why First-Grade True Techniques directly pointed to the Nascent Soul Realm !

“Moreover, because these worlds are rare, different Second-Grade True Techniques sometimes actually refer to the same external world’s Fruit Position, only differing in their interpretations.”

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt a little disappointed. “It’s a pity that the 【Divine Weapon Realm】 seems to be a secret realm unique to the Sword Pavilion. Unless I reincarnate into it, I have no way of harvesting Qi from there. Cultivating this Second-Grade Sword Art will probably have to wait until the next cycle.”

At this thought, Lü Yang shifted his focus.

After all, besides the Sword Pavilion’s 『Divine Weapon Refinement Sword Dissolution Art』 , he also had another Second-Grade True Technique given to him by True Person Chong Guang, a product of the Primordial Saint Sect.

『Heavenly Origin Unity Supreme Divine Law Governing All Realms』 !

The fundamental principle of this Second-Grade Technique was not much different from the 『Divine Weapon Refinement Sword Dissolution Art』 , with the only difference lying in the target and method of Qi harvesting.

“If the 『Divine Weapon Refinement Sword Dissolution Art』 refines a life-bound flying sword through 【Qi Harvesting】 , then the 『Heavenly Origin Unity Supreme Divine Law Governing All Realms』 aims to cultivate a supreme Dharma Body through 【Qi Harvesting】 . Therefore, the corresponding world is different, named the 【Myriad Martial Realm】 .”

Reading to this point, Lü Yang suddenly frowned again.

“Besides the Primordial Saint Sect, even the Pure Land has discovered the 【Myriad Martial Realm】 and has even developed a corresponding Second-Grade Technique to compete with the Primordial Saint Sect ?”

This was another difficulty in cultivating Second-Grade Techniques.

In addition to the hostility of the external world’s Fruit Position, one might also face competition from cultivators of other factions, making Qi harvesting even harder.

“However, entry into this path is much simpler.”

“After all, Second-Grade True Techniques are not actually tied to the Dao Foundation, so they can be cultivated alongside other techniques. Even those in the Foundation Establishment Realm can practice them without starting from Qi Refining.”

At this moment, a sudden loud noise came from the sky.

“Boom !”

In an instant, the heavens and earth trembled. A brilliant star suddenly lit up in the originally dim sky, radiating golden light that instantly illuminated the world.

The brilliance swept across, outshining the sun and moon, pushing aside the thirty-six layers of Astral Clouds in one breath, revealing an abyss-like expanse of deep blue sky. Finally, a majestic realm that seemed to encompass the universe emerged, resplendent with lights and vaguely revealing pavilions and jade towers.

“Uncle-Master Chong Guang succeeded ! ?”

Seeing this, Lü Yang was first shocked. He raised his head to look at the sky but quickly noticed something strange. “No... it’s still a Blessed Land, not yet sublimated into a Cave Heaven ! ”

Lü Yang had witnessed a true Cave Heaven with his own eyes.

Back when the Sword Pavilion’s True Lord had fallen overseas and his Cave Heaven had collapsed, Lü Yang had been there. Thus, he could distinguish the difference.

In his eyes, although the majestic realm currently manifested was impressive in momentum, it still lacked the transcendent aura that stood above the mortal world, much like the gap between Qi Refining and Foundation Establishment. Without ascension, the rank remained unchanged, no matter how strong the numbers, it was meaningless.

In other words—he had failed !

“Crack ! ”

The next moment, a crisp shattering sound echoed in the hearts of all the True Persons below, and an indescribable sorrow suddenly surged in everyone’s hearts.

Especially among the Foundation Establishment True Persons whose divine abilities involved 【Star Earth】 .

This was not their own emotional fluctuation but rather the heartfelt despair of True Person Chong Guang at this moment, transmitted through the Fruit Position to all related cultivators.

A single thought echoed throughout the world !

In a sense, this was already a symbol of a True Lord’s level. One could even say that at this moment, True Person Chong Guang had nearly stepped onto the position of True Lord.

Alas, it was still like rootless water.

“So close... yet still failed.”

In a daze, Lü Yang seemed to hear a long sigh.

Like a lamp encountering a violent wind, in an instant, the golden brilliance that had illuminated the world suddenly dimmed, and the once resplendent Blessed Land collapsed with a loud rumble !

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 246 : The Human Heart Is Hard to Change, Heaven's Will Is Firm

[1,582 words]

Chapter 246: The Human Heart Is Hard to Change, Heaven's Will Is Firm

Above the vault of heaven, inside the nearly collapsed 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 , Chong Guang stood with his hands clasped behind his back. His gaze, filled with unwillingness and reluctance, was fixed on that star in the sky.

【Overturning Lamp Flame】 .

Even now, that fruit of Dao still shone for him. Yet, he had no strength left to merge with it. All he could do was watch helplessly as its light gradually dimmed.

Lowering his head, Chong Guang looked at his four innate divine abilities, only to see that the 【Yin Dragon Water】 , which he had already reversed back to Yang Earth, was once again exuding traces of Yin Qi. These threads of Yin Qi were impossible to eliminate. It was precisely this lingering Yin Qi that caused his second attempt to end in failure once more.

"One misstep leads to a thousand miles of difference. Truly worthy of being a True Lord of the Primordial Saint Sect!"

In truth, the True Lord who had reversed the 【Earth of Chen】 had already completed all the necessary steps. The depth of that arrangement had likely spanned thousands of years, with a foundation beyond imagination.

"In comparison, I acted on a mere whim."

Thinking of this, unwillingness once again surfaced in Chong Guang's eyes. Yes, it had been nothing but a whim. If he had made preparations in advance as well, the outcome might not have been like this!

"I have already reversed the attributes of most of the world's 【Earth of Chen】 . The fact that I could achieve this proves that the foundation of that mysterious True Lord is still unstable. Perhaps he began reversing the 【Earth of Chen】 thousands of years

ago, but truly completing the reversal to transform Yang Earth into Yin Earth couldn't have happened more than a hundred years ago!"

If only he could return to a hundred years ago, the situation would undoubtedly be entirely different!

After all, even with such hasty improvisation, he had nearly succeeded.

By leveraging the treasure of the fruit of Dao to pry open the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 and reversing the world's 【Earth of Chen】 back to Yang, he had almost achieved it. Yet, he had been missing just one thing.

The original 【Yin Earth of Chen】 .

That mysterious True Lord's initial reversal of the Yin and Yang of the 【Earth of Chen】 had served as the foundation for reversing all of the world's 【Earth of Chen】 . Chong Guang had been unable to locate the True Lord's position.

And this was where he had failed.

At the final moment, the mysterious True Lord used that original 【Yin Earth of Chen】 to influence Chong Guang's 【Yin Dragon Water】 , causing him to fall short of success.

With this thought, Chong Guang glanced once more at the land below:

"The last piece of 【Earth of Chen】 , the original 【Yin Earth of Chen】 —where have you hidden it?"

At this moment, he stood overlooking the world with the perspective of a True Lord. Nothing in either the mortal world or the Foundation Establishment Realm should have been able to escape his gaze. Yet, he could not locate the True Lord's presence. All the 【Earth of Chen】 within his sight had already returned to Yang, with no trace of Yin Earth to be found.

"Could it be..."

In an instant, Chong Guang's gaze shifted slightly as if he had realized something. His eyes lit up for a moment but then dimmed again:

"Useless. This is a dead end after all."

However, Chong Guang quickly pulled himself together.

He made a quick calculation, then looked back. He saw that the heavy aura of fate and merit, which had once symbolized his innate celestial spirit heritage and had always hung behind his head, had completely vanished.

"Still not used to this feeling."

Chong Guang smiled and calculated the outcome he had expected:

"By the looks of it, after death, I'll probably have to live through a hundred and forty-seven lifetimes as a pig or a dog before I can be reborn as a human again."

Despite these words, there was not a trace of resentment on Chong Guang's face. Instead, the corners of his mouth lifted with a self-mocking smile:

"From an innate celestial spirit to a reincarnated pig or dog—I'm probably the only one to ever achieve such a feat. The good news is, pigs and dogs die quickly. One hundred and forty-seven lifetimes... isn't actually that long."

In other words, this was the end for him.

Even though he had already refined Metal Qi at the peak of Foundation Establishment, it was now completely useless.

Because a True Lord's Metal Qi would have already merged deeply with their soul, inseparable from their being, thus leaving no fetal mysteries.

However, the Metal Qi of a peak Foundation Establishment cultivator still existed as an external entity, which would be stripped away in the cycle of reincarnation. So even a peak Foundation Establishment cultivator could only live up to five lifetimes.

Moreover, his Metal Qi had already been completely expended when he promoted the Blessed Land.

If he wanted to survive, he would need a True Lord willing to protect his soul with their own Metal Qi through the cycle of reincarnation. Yet, his path had already been sealed. He held no further value to any True Lord.

After all, the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 had been cut off, and no one could testify for him.

In such circumstances, even Qingcheng Feixue True Lord, who had supported him the most, would not intervene. This was the Primordial Saint Sect—there was never any talk of compassion here.

"...So be it."

Chong Guang quickly sorted out his emotions:

"Reincarnation will cleanse my soul. When I am reborn, the traces of my Dao should have mostly faded."

By then, he could choose another path.

"Thinking of it this way, perhaps it's not such a bad thing after all."

Though by that time, the consciousness that belonged to "Chong Guang" would likely have completely dissipated, replaced by an entirely new life and consciousness.

But so what?

Chong Guang let out a calm laugh:

"If I attain the true fruit, whether it is the original me or another me, it is still me.

If I do not attain the true fruit, whether it is the original me or another me, it makes no real difference."

"Enough... The sooner I go, the sooner I return."

As these words fell, Chong Guang's figure dissolved beneath the last ray of brilliance from the 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 , like a fleeting dream, shattering into a sky full of colored clouds.

Yet just before completely collapsing, driven by a desire for revenge against the mysterious True Lord who had cut off his path, Chong Guang still managed to cast one last wisp of divine sense.

Looking at the gradually vanishing 【Overturning Lamp Flame】 in the sky, and the collapsing, disintegrating 【Dongyang Blessed Land】 merging into the heavens and earth, Lü Yang could not help but sigh.

Thinking back on all that Chong Guang had gone through, he couldn't help but curse under his breath:

"...Beast!"

What a cursed place this was—forming a Golden Core was absurdly difficult here. Every step was a trap, and one wrong move would lead to the same fate as Chong Guang, falling into eternal damnation.

Thinking of this, Lü Yang felt a wave of sorrow well up within him. If it were him, after finally reaching peak Foundation Establishment, spending countless years gathering the

required Heavenly Gang and Earthly Fiend elements, refining innate divine abilities, believing he could finally reach the Golden Core stage, only to discover at the last moment that something had gone wrong with the elements... and with the Dao being merciless and irreversible—

'...Oh right, I can restart, can't I?'

Then there was no problem at all!

With that thought, Lü Yang quickly calmed himself.

Dao is merciless? Not for me! As long as I am willing to walk the path, it lies right beneath my feet!

However, at that moment, Lü Yang suddenly froze.

In the next second, he took out the 【Invisible Sword】 , a superior spiritual sword whose material had come from Chong Guang True Person's celestial spirit body—a strand of Xin Metal Qi.

At this moment, that strand of Xin Metal Qi began to emit a faint glow.

'Is this... Chong Guang's final message?'

Lü Yang was stunned and was about to use his divine sense to investigate when a slightly hoarse, cold voice suddenly rang in his ear:

"What did Chong Guang tell you?"

Lü Yang's expression immediately stiffened. Only then did he come to his senses and slowly turn around.

Behind him, without his notice, stood a palace-robed woman, her entire body stained with blood and her clothes torn. Though her appearance was battered and worn from battle, her demeanor was incomparably dignified. There was not the slightest hint of madness. Instead, she looked like a graceful lady preparing to attend a banquet.

—Qingcheng Feixue True Lord!

"Disciple greets True Lord!"

Without hesitation, Lü Yang immediately presented the 【Invisible Sword】 .

"Disciple has yet to inspect the message left by Uncle-Master Chong Guang. I ask True Lord to see for yourself."

"Chong Guang... what a pity."

Upon hearing this, Feixue True Lord shook her head. She glanced at the 【Invisible Sword】 casually and sighed:

"Nothing useful. It's no longer relevant."

"If it had come a hundred years earlier, there might have been a chance to turn things around."

Oh?

Lü Yang's heart stirred slightly. A hundred years ago... wasn't that precisely his first anchor point, shortly after joining the sect as a Talent?

While committing this crucial piece of information to memory, Lü Yang also glanced at the 【Invisible Sword】 .

Perhaps because Chong Guang had little time left, the message he left through the 【Invisible Sword】 was very simple—just four words, clear and concise:

"It is in the 【Netherworld】 ."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 247 : Simply a Beast!

[1,592 words]

Chapter 247: Simply a Beast!

'It is in the Netherworld.'

Lü Yang showed a thoughtful expression. He was not unfamiliar with the Netherworld. It was the place of reincarnation, where countless souls returned. However, what did "it" refer to?

"It is 【Yin Earth of Chen】 ."

At that moment, True Person Qingchen Feixue beside him gave an answer.

“Ang Xiao. Although I am not certain if that person is truly him, I will assume it is.”

“Ang Xiao hid the 【Yin Earth of Chen】 in the Netherworld, placing it beyond the reach of the living. I suspect he himself is also within. No wonder there was no news of his reincarnation after his death back then. Even this time, although he showed part of his power, that was all. He is not invincible.”

“He certainly has guts.”

“By sending the 【Yin Earth of Chen】 into the Netherworld and working on it for thousands of years, he likely aims to seize the position of the 【Master of the Netherworld】 .”

“If we let him continue quietly like this, he might actually succeed.”

“But now that he has been exposed by Chong Guang, everyone is watching him closely. It won’t be so easy for him to proceed.”

As she spoke, a hint of satisfaction appeared on True Person Qingchen Feixue’s face.

“This time, although all the True Persons working together failed to defeat him, we managed to hold him back, rendering him powerless to interfere with the return of 【Chen Earth】 to Yang.”

“It’s a pity Chong Guang didn’t attain the fruit position.”

“Otherwise, his entire scheme would have collapsed, knocking him down from the Late Golden Core stage. By then, we wouldn’t even need to act—the Netherworld itself wouldn’t spare him!”

“After today, I estimate he’ll have to spend a long time reversing the 【Chen Earth】 again. That might not have mattered in the past, but with the millennium tribulation approaching, he may no longer have the chance to take the position of Dao Master. Reaching Golden Core Perfection might be his limit, all while becoming the target of all.”

“Haha! He deserves it!”

By the end, True Person Qingchen Feixue slapped her thigh and laughed heartily, almost tearing off her dignified mask and revealing a hint of madness.

However, Lü Yang felt nothing but terror.

The reason was simple: True Person Qingchen Feixue had told him too much. Almost everything she mentioned was top-level secrets only True Persons should know, yet she told him everything.

What was she planning?

“Don’t be so scared.”

True Person Qingchen Feixue smiled at Lü Yang, but though she smiled, her laughter was cold as ice, like a snowstorm in midwinter, devoid of any warmth.

“I intend to grant you an opportunity.”

Lü Yang dared not hesitate and immediately bowed deeply.

“Please instruct me, True Person.”

“Now that Chong Guang is dead, I have no one else I can use. Besides, I’ve suffered considerable damage in this battle and need time to recuperate. Afterward, I will seal my Cave Heaven.”

“I’ll give you thirty years.”

“If you can cultivate the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiends to perfection within thirty years, together with the half-true treasure Hong Yun left behind, you will be qualified to become a Grand True Person.”

“By then, you will be the next Acting Sect Master of the Primordial Saint Sect.”

The moment she said this, Lü Yang held his breath, hardly daring to believe his ears.

Acting Sect Master? Me? Was she painting a pie in the sky for him?

However, thirty years... Lü Yang quickly furrowed his brows.

The Great Dao was difficult to tread. The cultivation progress of a Foundation Establishment True Person was measured in centuries, not something that could be achieved simply by finding a Heavenly Gang or Earth Fiend and refining it.

The key lay in Dao Attainment.

Only with high Dao Attainment could one sense and refine the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiends into one's innate divine ability. Yet, he had just broken through to the middle stage—how could he possibly have the Dao Attainment to take another step forward?

Moreover, finding a Heavenly Gang or Earth Fiend required the support of merit and destiny. Yet, a third of his merit had just been drained by Chong Guang. It was already fortunate that he wasn’t clouded by tribulation qi. How much merit did he have left to

sense the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiends? Wasn't this forcing him to do the impossible?

True Person Qingchen Feixue clearly noticed Lü Yang's doubts.

"Relax. Since I mentioned thirty years, I naturally have the confidence to back it up. Of course, you will need to take a small risk."

She then looked Lü Yang up and down again.

"What you lack to reach middle-stage perfection is nothing more than Dao Attainment and destiny. Both can be quickly remedied. First, your Dao Attainment."

"The second Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend of 【City Head Earth】 takes the form of 【Yin Wood】 ."

"【Yin Wood】 occupies the Earth Fiend position, but it shares the same nature as 【Jia Wood】 in the Heavenly Gang position. Both are Yang Wood, fully interchangeable."

As she spoke, True Person Qingchen Feixue pointed to a spiritual light beside Lü Yang—it was the spirit embryo 【Everlasting Chinese Toon】 he had obtained from Ye Guyue.

"Chong Guang's innate divine ability is also 【Jia Wood】 . The spirit embryo it transformed into contains Chong Guang's insights."

"I can invite another True Person to assist you."

"As long as you refine this spirit embryo into a great pill and consume it, your Dao Attainment will naturally increase, satisfying the requirement to absorb 【Yin Wood】 ."

Lü Yang was utterly stunned.

Was this what it felt like to have a True Person backing him? A Dao Attainment obstacle that could have troubled him for a hundred years was resolved just like that? What a powerful backer!

"As for merit and destiny, that's even simpler."

True Person Qingchen Feixue spoke casually as she continued:

"Didn't you obtain the 『Heavenly Unity Law of Controlling All Worlds』 ? Go 【harvest qi】 . The more you harvest, the more heaven and earth will return destiny to you."

The essence of a second-grade true art was to plunder the fruit positions of other worlds to strengthen one's own, thereby gaining the favor of one's fruit position. Naturally, the more you harvested and the more you plundered, the more generous heaven and earth would be in rewarding you.

However, there were risks.

“The 『Heavenly Unity Law of Controlling All Worlds』 also touches upon the Pure Land of the 【Myriad Martial World】 . You have already become a thorn in their side.”

“Disciple understands.”

Lü Yang cupped his hands, knowing this was the “risk” True Person Qingchen Feixue spoke of. He had to face whatever troubles the Pure Land might bring head-on.

With True Person Qingchen Feixue about to seal her Cave Heaven, she would not be able to support him, at most providing deterrence.

In other words, only by relying on his own ability to withstand the pressure from the Pure Land and grow could he be considered a suitable candidate for Acting Sect Master of the Primordial Saint Sect.

‘Chong Guang must have walked the same path back then.’

Lü Yang suddenly realized that while he now faced the Pure Land of Jiangxi, Chong Guang had once faced Daoist Hong Yun. This was the tradition of the Primordial Saint Sect.

“I hope I can still see you thirty years from now.”

Seeing Lü Yang’s understanding, True Person Qingchen Feixue nodded.

“The 【Myriad Martial World】 related to the 『Heavenly Unity Law of Controlling All Worlds』 has rarely been visited by anyone.”

“If you want to learn more, you can seek out Miao Yin.”

At this point, True Person Qingchen Feixue glanced at Ye Guyue not far away, showing a teasing look.

“After all, you seem to like that kind of thing.”

“True Person, you misunderstand me!”

Concerned about his reputation, Lü Yang quickly explained, “This disciple does not indulge in women. It is all for the sake of seeking the Dao! This disciple is merely acting out of necessity.”

True Person Qingchen Feixue laughed immediately.

“Truly worthy of being a descendant of the Founder!”

Suddenly, as if recalling something, she shifted the topic:

“By the way, I know you obtained the first-grade True Qi deduced by Mu Changsheng.”

“However, the theory of empty verification is illusory and unreliable. Give it up. Don’t delve too deeply into that.”

Lü Yang was slightly startled upon hearing this but quickly realized that the “Mu Changsheng” she referred to must have been the original name of the Innate True Person.

“Please enlighten me, True Person.” Lü Yang quickly asked for guidance.

True Person Qingchen Feixue did not give a direct answer. Instead, she casually revealed a secret.

“I just mentioned the 【Netherworld】 , the place of reincarnation you are familiar with.”

“What fruit position do you think the 【Netherworld】 corresponds to?”

In an instant, Lü Yang’s pupils contracted!

Without a doubt, the 【Netherworld】 was not part of the Five Elements and had no relation to any fruit position. It was empty verification! Or rather, it originated from something external!

But if it was empty verification, then what happened to the one who verified it?

Where was the 【Master of the Netherworld】 ?

Lü Yang instantly understood everything.

Indeed, first-grade true arts, or the method of empty verification, did directly point toward the Nascent Soul. However, it was also likely bait set by the Nascent Soul Dao Masters!

It was specifically designed to lure in external fruit positions like the 【Netherworld】 !

Once someone successfully verified the empty fruit position and the external fruit took the bait, they would immediately betray and destroy the verifier to prevent anyone from truly breaking through and standing as their equal.

'Simply beasts!'

Lü Yang couldn't help but curse the shamelessness of the Nascent Soul Dao Masters in his heart.

Under such circumstances, who would dare attempt empty verification? Unless someone could secretly take away the verified fruit position without being detected by any Nascent Soul Dao Master...

...Hmm?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,396 words]

Chapter 248: Gathering Qi

The method of Emptiness Attestation should rightfully be mine!

This was the only thought in Lü Yang's mind after hearing the warning from Qing Chen Feixue True Person, and this confidence naturally came from the 《Book of a Hundred Lifetimes》.

"Emptiness Attestation's greatest issue is being discarded by the Dao Lords after achieving it, but I'm different. As long as I restart immediately upon attaining the attestation and bring it back, the attestation will be cleansed by the 《Book of a Hundred Lifetimes》, leaving no cause or effect. What can the Dao Lords do to me then?"

Lü Yang barely managed to keep a straight face, refraining from laughing aloud, as he watched Qing Chen Feixue True Person depart.

With Chong Guang's death and the mysterious True Person re-concealing themselves, the various True Persons dispersed their attestations, and the sky returned to clarity, as if no great battle had ever occurred.

"Come back with me."

Lü Yang glanced at Duo Bao Tongzi, who had been anxiously waiting outside the blessed land, not daring to leave, and smiled slightly: "Fellow Daoist, you still have merit."

After all, he wasn't some great demon.

Being a rogue cultivator was tough, and small sects even tougher. Lü Yang considered himself a very empathetic person and naturally wouldn't make things difficult for Duo Bao Tongzi.

Moreover, there wasn't much to extract from him anymore.

Yet, with just a few words, Duo Bao Tongzi nearly burst into tears.

Reflecting on the hardships of recent days—since leaving Jiangbei and joining another sect, nothing had gone smoothly, and he was constantly misunderstood.

Previously, he had even been extorted by the Sword Pavilion, harboring a belly full of anger.

Now, looking back, it was the Saint Sect that truly appreciated talent, recognizing the abilities hidden beneath his exterior. Why had he foolishly chosen to betray them before?

Previously, a casual compliment from Lü Yang wouldn't have stirred such emotions in Duo Bao Tongzi, but after enduring repeated hardships and realizing he had not only survived but also earned merit, he was nearly moved to tears.

"Thank you, my lord!"

Seeing this, Lü Yang nodded, then took out the Abi Sword. A burst of sword energy reduced the unconscious Ye Guyue beside him to dust, and he departed gracefully.

Saint Sect, Luofeng Mountain.

After casually dismissing Duo Bao Tongzi, Lü Yang wandered around the mountain, listening to the sounds of people, easing the tension of the past days.

In cultivation, balance between relaxation and tension is the proper path.

However, despite not being away for long, returning now gave Lü Yang a sense of having been away for ages, simply because the mountain was unusually lively.

Looking around, the crowd was no less than that of the past Mending Heaven Peak, perhaps even more so. Many disciples were practicing the Witch Ghost Path's

techniques, as under the guidance of Master Ting You, these techniques were thirty percent cheaper than others, with monthly limited-time discounts.

"How is it?"

The myriad spirit banners fluttered, and Master Ting You's figure appeared beside Lü Yang, with a touch of sentiment on his face and a genuine smile in his words.

"Thank you for your hard work, Master."

Lü Yang also showed a sentimental expression: "Thinking back, our lineage had only a single disciple, akin to a rogue cultivator. To have today's prosperity feels like a dream."

Hearing this, Master Ting You looked at Lü Yang, a trace of pity in his eyes, and a mental image of a disciple of the Witch Ghost Path, oppressed by the Sword Pavilion, living in constant fear yet never forgetting to revive the sect, emerged in his mind. He patted Lü Yang's shoulder:

"You've suffered."

Lü Yang shook his head and said solemnly: "Striving for the sect's revival isn't suffering. My abilities are limited; I'll still need Master to take care in the future."

Master Ting You nodded and proactively said:

"The Saint Sect's True Persons have broader insights than I do, so for now, don't consider first-grade Emptiness Attestation. However, second-grade is worth deliberating."

"I understand."

Lü Yang nodded, not truly giving up, but taking things step by step. Rushing could easily lead to problems.

"First, pursue the path of second-grade techniques, gradually understanding their intricacies, then consider Emptiness Attestation. Actually, the best method is to follow the ordinary path first—regardless of anything else, achieve a Golden Core, then reverse-engineer the techniques. Cultivating beyond one's level suits me."

"What are your plans next?"

Seeing Lü Yang deep in thought, Master Ting You asked with concern: "Increasing Dao practice and fortune to seek a second innate divine ability isn't easy."

"Moreover, you know the Saint Sect."

Master Ting You spoke very subtly.

However, Lü Yang understood in his heart. According to Qing Chen Feixue True Person, she would invite a True Person to help refine the [Immortal Spring] into a great pill.

Once the pill was formed, consuming it would replenish his Dao practice.

It sounded wonderful, but this was the Saint Sect. A pill refined by a Saint Sect True Person—could it be trusted? Who knows what might be added!

After careful consideration, Lü Yang still shook his head: "The True Person wouldn't harm me."

"Are you confident?" Master Ting You frowned.

With the [Book of a Hundred Lifetimes] in his possession, Lü Yang had a safeguard and naturally wasn't worried. However, he maintained a sincere expression: "No, but I trust the True Person."

"You're quite loyal."

Before Lü Yang finished speaking and before Master Ting You could respond, a third voice sounded, accompanied by a gentle footstep.

Master Ting You's expression instantly froze, and Lü Yang's smile became strained, a great shock arising in his heart.

"Who is it!?"

Lü Yang turned his head to look beside him, only to see a woman in brocade robes and a rosy cloak, with cascading black hair, appearing gentle and graceful.

"A Grand True Person? A True Person?"

In an instant, Lü Yang's thoughts raced. Although both could approach him unnoticed, he made a decision immediately:

"Disciple greets the True Person!"

"Oh?" The woman showed surprise and then asked curiously: "You recognize me?"

Lü Yang respectfully replied: "I don't, but regardless of your cultivation, I would address you as True Person. After all, it's always pleasant to address someone with a higher cultivation."

"Sharp-tongued."

The woman smiled: "I am Zeng Cai Qiluo True Person, an old acquaintance of Feihong—whom you call Qing Chen Feixue True Person."

"She invited me out this time specifically for you, to help refine a Jia Wood Pill to enhance your Dao practice in preparation for your second innate divine ability." As she spoke, the woman lightly shook her robe, and clouds rose from her skirt, forming a cloud pavilion supporting her.

"Where is the [Immortal Spring]? Take it out."

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang didn't dare hesitate and immediately took out the spiritual material given to him by Ye Guyue. The woman received it and examined it carefully:

"Hmm, the fire is quite strong."

"Unfortunately, it's been overexposed."

Then the woman shook her head, and the cloud transformed into a teapot. She directly threw the [Immortal Spring] into the pot and gently shook it.

"I also heard you're going to 'gather qi'?"

The True Person asked, and even though her tone sounded like casual conversation, Lü Yang didn't dare be negligent:

"Replying to the True Person, this was also Qing Chen Feixue True Person's instruction. She said that going beyond the heavens to gather qi would help increase one's fortune and seek the Heavenly Gang and Earth Fiend."

"It's a good method, just a bit risky. In the past century, you're the most prominent figure in our Saint Sect. After such a commotion, your reputation has spread far and wide. Several Foundation Establishment cultivators from the Sword Pavilion have died, directly or indirectly, all related to you."

"You're quite the hot commodity now."

At this point, the woman curiously asked:

"In such circumstances, letting you go beyond the heavens suggests that Feihong truly trusts your strength, or... have you offended her in some way?"

"...Hmm?"

Upon hearing this, Lü Yang was stunned and cautiously asked: "May I ask, True Person, what dangers would someone like me face beyond the heavens?"

The woman laughed: "Someone like you, achieving mid-stage Foundation Establishment in a hundred years, now nearing completion, often indicates being blessed with fortune and exceptional talent. In a sense, you're the essence of heaven and earth—in other words, you're a prime source of qi."

"A prime source of qi... me...?"

In an instant, Lü Yang's pupils contracted, and he suddenly thought of something: Could the so-called 'gathering qi' be exclusive to this world?

Perhaps 'beyond the heavens' is a relative term!

In other words, if he went beyond the heavens, then...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,614 words]

Chapter 249: Lost Magnetic Union, Encountering Miaoyin

While they were talking, a fragrant aroma rose from the teapot in the woman's hand, making Lü Yang feel a wave of indescribable comfort surging through his entire body just by smelling it.

"Alright."

The next second, the 【True Lord Zeng Cai Qi Luo】 stopped shaking the teapot in her hand.

Cloud mist gathered before Lü Yang, forming a teacup.

She then filled the cup with tea.

Lü Yang glanced at it and saw that the tea inside shimmered with a blue-purple hue, flickering with specks of light.

"Drink it."

The woman calmly watched Lü Yang without giving any explanation.

The blue-purple tea looked incredibly strange, as if something suspicious had been added to it.

However, Lü Yang did not hesitate in the slightest.

“Thank you, True Lord!”

He lifted the teacup and drank it all in one gulp.

His decisiveness and speed made the woman raise her embroidered eyebrows slightly, revealing a hint of surprise.

He didn't hesitate at all?

Is he truly this loyal?

“Looks like I've been overly suspicious.”

The woman smiled with satisfaction, then stood up with a wave of her sleeve and silently disappeared from the spot.

Within the tea pavilion formed by the gathering cloud mist, the spiritual energy of heaven and earth flowed in naturally.

Moreover, all of it was wood-type spiritual energy, creating an environment perfectly suited for comprehending the wood element.

Lü Yang sat within it, his eyes closed, feeling as though his very soul was being strengthened by the infusion of that cup of tea.

Only after a long time did he slowly open his eyes.

The growth of a Foundation Establishment True Person's cultivation was completely different from Qi Refining.

Most of the time, there was no risk of running out of spiritual power.

The true transformation lay in the growth of innate divine abilities.

Besides that, Dao comprehension took precedence.

At the same cultivation realm, the depth of Dao comprehension directly determined one's level in combat.

So-called Dao comprehension referred to the Foundation Establishment True Person's understanding of their own Dao.

The higher the Dao comprehension, the easier it was to absorb the Heavenly Stars and Earthly Fiends, accelerating cultivation progress.

If the Dao comprehension was too low, one wouldn't even be able to locate them, let alone absorb them.

Yet, Dao comprehension was based on one's experience of heaven and earth, not on tangible objects.

Thus, improving it felt illusory and hard to grasp.

"This is truly the means of a True Lord."

If not for being a True Lord, it would have been impossible to refine the 【Immortal Tree】 into a Dao-comprehension enhancing elixir.

And even so, it had to match his attribute to be effective.

After all, the Earthly Fiend he intended to cultivate next was 【Yin Wood】 .

Coincidentally, it corresponded to the same Yang Wood attribute as the Heavenly Star 【Jia Wood】 .

The two shared a mysterious connection, allowing him to use one to refine the other.

Otherwise, even a True Lord could not accomplish something without the necessary resources.

"Yang Wood..."

Lü Yang muttered softly, clarity flashing in his eyes.

He then opened his palm, and the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict】 appeared in his hand.

The half-true treasure rotated slightly, immediately transforming into the form of a brilliant divine ability, none other than 【Star Concealment Radiance】 .

However, in the next moment, as Lü Yang's thoughts shifted, the original 【Star Concealment Radiance】 gradually changed form.

In the end, it transformed into a mass of white light resting in his palm.

"My previous understanding of 【Yin Wood】 was still too shallow."

Lü Yang sighed and said, “Although 【Star Concealment Radiance】 is also related to 【Yin Wood】 , it incorporates the Heavenly Star 【Ding Fire】 , which actually mismatches with 【City Wall Earth】 .”

“ 【Star Concealment Radiance】 conceals cause and effect and hides one’s presence, a technique fit for assassins and solitary practitioners.”

“Whereas 【City Wall Earth】 once represented a manifest rank within the ancient Dao Court.”

“The Dao Court held the authority of heaven and earth, building the empire of the Son of Heaven.”

“How could a Son of Heaven practice the secret arts of assassins and solitary wanderers?”

“Yin corresponds to Gen, Gen represents a mountain, and a mountain is solid earth, which aligns with the Heavenly Star 【Wu Earth】 .”

“Thus, my 【Upholding the Mountain】 was formed by the union of 【Wu Earth】 and the Earthly Fiend 【Yin Wood】 .”

“My next innate divine ability should likewise be compatible with it.”

“Therefore, what I seek from 【Yin Wood】 should harmonize with the Heavenly Star 【Ji Earth】 .”

“Only in this way can 【Wu Earth】 integrate with 【Yin Wood】 , and 【Yin Wood】 again with 【Ji Earth】 , stringing together my entire Dao path without chaos.”

This was the purpose of Dao comprehension.

If Lü Yang’s Dao comprehension had been insufficient, and he had misunderstood the direction, continuing to seek the Heavenly Stars and Earthly Fiends with 【Star Concealment Radiance】 would have wasted centuries in vain.

At the same time, this also demonstrated the profound mystery of the 【Imperial Mansion Golden Seal Dou Shuai True Edict】 .

It allowed one to simulate innate divine abilities in advance.

As long as the direction was correct, it helped to trial and error beforehand.

At this moment, under Lü Yang's manipulation, this half-true treasure immediately radiated divine brilliance different from before.

"I shall name it— **【Lost Magnetic Union】** !"

Lü Yang gazed at the brand new innate divine ability in his palm, feeling it suited him even more than **【Star Concealment Radiance】** , and it was much smoother to wield.

"Yin represents Yang Wood, and wood generates fire."

" **【Yin Wood】** dwelling in **【Ji Earth】** symbolizes wood and fire sharing authority."

"It tempers Ji Earth, transforming it into a magnetic stone, disrupting the balance of pure and impure energies, causing the Three Talents of Heaven, Earth, and Man to fall into disorder."

In simple terms, **【Lost Magnetic Union】** could produce a divine light called **【Primordial Magnetic Separation and Union Divine Light】** .

It specifically disrupted divine abilities and magical treasures, making them lose control and backfire on their owners.

No matter what divine ability or spiritual treasure it was, a single sweep of this divine light would render the enemy helpless, leaving them with nothing but regret.

"So much easier to use!"

Lü Yang's eyes brightened.

He knew that with his current Dao comprehension, he could already seek his next innate divine ability.

This was the greatest harvest of this session!

"Speaking of harvest... right."

Thinking of this, Lü Yang put away the divine ability and took out a long sword from his storage bag.

The sword was covered in dense cracks, almost shattered, and still emanated demonic energy.

【Nine-Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 !

This was the life-bound flying sword that Ye Guyue had refined through the 『Divine Weapon Refining and Sword Dissolution Technique』 .

It had previously clashed with Lü Yang's Abi Sword, resulting in mutual destruction.

Later, Lü Yang had used the Heavenly Demons within the sword to dispel disasters and avert tribulations.

All nine Heavenly Demons had been crushed by Lü Yang.

Now, this magical sword no longer had any Heavenly Demons guarding it, leaving only the sword body with most of its mystical power lost.

Even so, by killing again and using the sword for sacrificial rituals, the Heavenly Demons could be re-manifested.

“This is pure orthodox demonic cultivation.”

Lü Yang shook his head, gripping the 【Nine-Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 and pondering how to make use of it.

The latest chapters are first released on 69 Book Bar!

“I already have the Abi Sword and the Invisible Sword to protect me.”

“Actually, I don't need a third magical sword.”

Compared to the power of the 【Nine-Offspring Mother Heavenly Demon Immortal Execution Sword】 , Lü Yang valued more its ability to dispel disasters and avert calamities.

He just didn't know how to utilize it effectively.

“Perhaps I can make another trip to the Manifestation Pavilion.”

At that moment.

“Rustle! Rustle!”

He saw a stream of light descending from the sky, finally landing steadily within Luofeng Mountain.

Soon, a dignified and elegant noblewoman stepped out from the light.

Lü Yang's eyebrows immediately lifted upon seeing her.

The next moment, the noblewoman parted her red lips, exhaling a delicate orchid fragrance as she softly spoke:

“This humble one greets Daoist Friend.”

“Forgive me for disturbing your cultivation.”

“...It’s nothing.”

Lü Yang put away the magical sword and smiled slightly.

“Though, I wonder why Madam, a woman burdened with countless affairs, would make time to visit my humble Luofeng Mountain?”

As he spoke, Lü Yang glanced at True Person Miaoyin again.

She had already changed out of her white mourning attire.

Now she wore a bright red wide-sleeved robe over a translucent outer garment.

Her snow-white skin was faintly visible through it.

On her breathtakingly beautiful face, she carried the noble bearing of someone long accustomed to a position of power.

It was a very peculiar aura.

Elegant and gentle, yet not lacking in charm.

It made people want to protect her.

Yet it also stirred the urge to ruthlessly violate her, forcing her to beg pitifully.

She had done this on purpose.

Lü Yang narrowed his eyes.

Without a doubt, True Person Miaoyin had deliberately dressed up before coming.

Compared to her previous mourning attire, this was a completely different appearance.

“Naturally, I’ve come regarding the matter of 【Qi Harvesting】 .”

True Person Miaoyin covered her mouth and laughed softly, her eyes flowing with charm.

“Daoist Friend and my late husband were close as brothers.”

“You should have already obtained the original of the cultivation method from him, correct?”

“However, the 『Heavenly Primordial Unity Supreme Overarching God Method』 is extremely profound.”

“In the 【Ten Thousand Martial Realm】 , aside from this humble one, I fear few True Persons have any real understanding of it.”

“Moreover, since Daoist Friend obtained the method from my husband, are you not concerned that it might be flawed?”

“Coincidentally, this humble one also possesses a copy of the same method.”

“If Daoist Friend is willing, I can present it to you for comparison...”

As she spoke, True Person Miaoyin had already walked up to Lü Yang.

Facing this scene, Lü Yang maintained a smile on his face.

But deep inside, there was not the slightest desire.

Instead, the coldness in the depths of his eyes grew even more intense.

This woman was up to no good!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 250 : Shooting the Arrow First, Drawing the Target Later

[1,360 words]

Chapter 250: Shooting the Arrow First, Drawing the Target Later

Looking at Lü Yang, who was desperately trying to restrain himself but still showed signs of discomfort, Divine Person Miaoyin maintained her smile while secretly sneering in her heart.

Heh, men!

In the next second, she deliberately took a step back.

Just a moment ago, she had been seducing him proactively, but now she had returned to her elegant and dignified demeanor.

She knew these men all too well.

Trying to seduce someone by throwing oneself into their arms was the lowest strategy.

The truly effective method was to tempt while appearing reserved.

Men, after all, desired more what they could not easily obtain.

Only by keeping them dangling, pulling and pushing, could one fully control them.

“How about it? Would fellow Daoist like to have a chat?”

Divine Person Miaoyin’s tone softened, as if the earlier provocative words had been an unintentional slip, as if she never meant anything by them.

The more unpredictable she appeared, the itchier it made one’s heart!

As expected, Lü Yang’s eagerness grew even more obvious as he quickly spoke, “Madam hasn’t yet mentioned why you sought me out this time?”

“I wish to make a trip to the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 to gather Qi and increase my fortune.”

“Unfortunately, the dangers outside the sky are many, and I have no one to protect me.”

Divine Person Miaoyin sighed and said, “In the past, my husband supported me, but now that he has passed away, I truly cannot find a trustworthy helper.”

After speaking, she looked up at Lü Yang again.

Every word, every frown, and every smile vividly displayed the frailty and helplessness hidden beneath her elegance, especially after losing her husband.

Combined with her identity as the wife of a former superior, this was enough to move the hearts of many.

Lü Yang seemed no exception.

“I agree to this!”

He patted his chest and laughed, "It just so happens that I also plan to gather Qi outside the sky. I can accompany Madam, and we can look after each other."

"Many thanks, fellow Daoist!"

Upon hearing this, Divine Person Miaoyin immediately showed a hint of gratitude.

The paleness on her delicate face was replaced by a charming blush.

"This time, I have invited only fellow Daoist. I hope fellow Daoist will cherish me."

After speaking, Divine Person Miaoyin bowed slightly.

Her words stirred the imagination, yet her tone was utterly proper, as if she had no hidden meaning.

Lü Yang's expression became even more uncontrollable.

However, Divine Person Miaoyin did not linger.

Seeing this, she directly rode a beam of escape light and drifted away with a fragrant breeze, without giving Lü Yang a chance to speak again.

“.”

After watching Divine Person Miaoyin leave, Lü Yang finally retracted his expression.

At that moment, Grandmaster Ting You quietly appeared behind him, looking at him with slight concern.

"Yuan Tu, you haven't really fallen for her, have you?"

"Grandmaster must be joking."

Lü Yang turned around.

The eagerness on his face just moments ago had completely disappeared, replaced by a cold indifference.

His eyes were calm as he softly spoke,

"She wants to harm me."

After saying this, Lü Yang thought for a moment and added,

“To be precise, this woman is likely colluding with someone else, trying to set a trap to harm me.”

“Eh?”

Grandmaster Ting You was momentarily stunned.

He thought, though he did want Lü Yang to be cautious of this woman and not be swayed by her beauty, wasn't this a bit too extreme?

“Isn't that going too far?”

“What's too far about it?” Lü Yang glanced at Grandmaster Ting You and lowered his voice.

“Grandmaster, this is the Primordial Saint Sect! Such things are not surprising here!”

Such is the way of the Saint Sect!

Grandmaster Ting You wanted to argue but, after thinking it over, felt that since it was the Saint Sect, it wasn't impossible either.

He could only change the topic and ask, “What makes you so sure?”

“The fact that she took the initiative to approach me!”

Lü Yang remained calm as he analyzed, “Why would she seek me out on her own? Could it be simply because she misunderstood me as being lustful and thought she could use that against me?”

—What else could it be?

Seeing Grandmaster Ting You's strange expression, Lü Yang immediately guessed what he was thinking and couldn't help but say, “Grandmaster, you know me well.”

“Am I the type to indulge in carnal pleasures?”

Upon hearing this, Grandmaster Ting You silently retorted in his heart.

It was precisely because he knew Lü Yang too well that he was worried Lü Yang might lose his head over beauty.

Seeing this, Lü Yang could only explain helplessly,

“I won't deny that she's trying to toy with me, but that's just a common tactic among Saint Sect practitioners. It doesn't prove anything.”

“Looking beyond appearances to the essence, no matter what tactics she used, the very fact that she took the initiative to approach me is already wrong!”

“Because she is the one in control.”

“She holds the detailed information about the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 . If I wish to gather Qi there, I must rely on her. I am the weaker side.”

“In this situation, any competent Saint Sect practitioner would hold their position to maximize their benefits. Yet she came to me on her own.”

“Such behavior must mean she has another agenda, and a significant one at that!”

“So significant that she believes I would never agree, so significant that she humbled herself to seek me out, which can only mean she intends to take my life!”

Grandmaster Ting You listened with a stiff expression:

“This is just your suspicion, right? Most of it is speculation. You’re drawing the target after shooting the arrow, assuming from the start that she means you harm.”

Lü Yang’s assumptions could be explained in many ways.

For example, Divine Person Miaoyin might have lost her composure after the death of Chong Guang.

Or maybe she hadn’t thought it through.

Or perhaps because Lü Yang had spoken face-to-face with True Lord Feixue, she feared Lü Yang already possessed information about the 【Ten Thousand Martial World】 .

Lü Yang did not deny this.

After all, he had indeed started by assuming that Divine Person Miaoyin had ulterior motives before reasoning backward to find her motive.

However, he didn’t think there was anything wrong with that.

“With a Saint Sect practitioner, one can never be too cautious!”

Unless it was someone like Madam Ruo Xiang, whose cultivation was lower than his own, Lü Yang might treat them more casually.

But Divine Person Miaoyin was completely different.

Because she had already reached the peak of the Foundation Establishment Mid-Stage!

Moreover, as Chong Guang's former Dao companion, who knew how many treasures she had secretly acquired?

If they truly fought, she might even surpass Ye Guyue.

Lü Yang would never dare to take someone like her lightly.

"Better to believe it than not." Lü Yang thought to himself, then stood up.

"I need to visit the Manifestation Pavilion and prepare in advance."

At the Sky-reaching Sea of Clouds, on Mount Wenda.

This was Divine Person Miaoyin's personal Dao ground.

At the deepest part of a grand hall, Divine Person Miaoyin landed with a fragrant breeze, riding her escape light, and then closed the hall.

This was because this hall was actually a top-grade spiritual treasure, named 【Do Not See Without Courtesy Court】 .

Its mystical properties were similar to Lü Yang's 【Star Concealing Radiance】 .

Once the doors were closed, all causality was hidden.

Everything that happened within was nearly impossible to trace, unless a True Lord personally intervened to deduce it.

Inside the hall, Divine Person Miaoyin took out a round mirror.

The mirror's surface was smooth.

She lightly brushed it with her hand, channeling her magical power.

In an instant, brilliant light appeared on the mirror, revealing many scenes within the light.

Soon, a voice emerged from it:

"Fellow Daoist, coming to me at this time is quite the coincidence."

The voice was clear and sounded like that of a scholar.

As the mirror gradually revealed the figure, it indeed showed a handsome young man.

“Suo Huan.”

Divine Person Miaoyin spoke calmly and slowly:

“I have found you a supreme-grade Qi.”

“.Oh?”

The young man named Suo Huan raised his eyebrows and said,

“Supreme-grade? That’s not something to claim lightly. Is the Qi you speak of a thing, or a person?”

“Of course, a person!”

Divine Person Miaoyin replied softly:

“After a hundred years of cultivation, one lifetime reaching the mid-stage of Foundation Establishment, now seeking perfection in the mid-stage, don’t you agree this is supreme-grade?”

Upon hearing this, Suo Huan immediately narrowed his eyes and said,

“Indeed, it is supreme-grade...”

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.